





November 1894. For this year the Original-Series Texts were issued in 1893, and so were the Extra-Series Texts. The Texts of both Series for 1895 are now ready, as well as the Original-Series Texts for 1896 and 1897. The Extra-Series Texts for 1896 and '97 will, it is hoped, be issued in 1895. Members are asked to send their two- or three-years' subscriptions for both Series at once in advance.

The Original-Series Texts for 1894 are—No. 102, Part I of Dr. R. von Fleischhacker's edition of the englisht *Lanfranc's Chirurgie*, about 1400 A.D., a treatise perhaps more valuable for Dictionary purposes than any yet issued by the Society, which takes up to Chaucer's death the whole class of surgical and medical words (besides many others of common speech) which we before had only from the black-letters of Queen Elizabeth's time. No. 103, is Prof. Napier's edition of a 12th-century Homily on the *Legend of the Cross*, with an Introduction on the different Legends about it, an incomplete Chester *Hymn to the Virgin* of the 13th century, and a short Paper on the soft and hard *g's* of the *Ormulum* MS., with a facsimile.

The Extra-Series Texts for 1894 are No. LXV, the 3rd and last Part of *Sir Bevis of Hamton*, edited by Prof. Kölbing, Ph.D., and No. LXVI, Lydgate's and Burgh's *Secrees of Philisoffres*, edited by Robert Steele, B.A., Lydgate's last and unfinished work.

For 1895, the first Text of the Original Series is No. 104, Part I of Mr. Gollancz's re-edition of *The Exeter Book*, from the unique MS., a collection of the choicest Anglo-Saxon lyric poetry, with a modern English translation. The second is Part I of the *Prymer* or *Lay Folks' Prayer-Book*, from the MS. ab. 1420 A.D., in the Cambr. Univ. Libr., ed. by Mr. Hy. Littlehales, with two leaves of Facsimiles. This forms a valuable portion of the Society's Pre-Reformation vernacular Liturgical Series, undertaken on the recommendation of the late Canon Simmons.

The Extra-Series Texts for 1895 are two prose Romances from unique MSS., about 1500 A.D., englisht from French originals: *The Three Kings' Sons* (of France, Scotland, England), Part I, the text, ed. Dr. F. J. Furnivall; *Mclusine*, Pt. I, the text, ed. A. K. Donald, B.A.

The Original-Series Texts for 1896 are both dialectal: No. 106, Richard Misyng—he was Prior of Lincoln—englishings in 1434 and 1435 of Richard Rolle of Hampole's *Fire of Love* and *Mending of Life*, edited by the Rev. Rt. Harvey, M.A., Headmaster of the Cork Grammar School;—this Text, tho not in a pure dialect, is interesting for forms like *sarif*, for *serice*, &c.;—and No. 107, *The English Conquest of Ireland*, 1166-85, two parallel-texts of about 1425 and 1440, of which the earlier has now and then *dyng*, *tynge*, for *thing*, &c., edited by Dr. Furnivall.

The Extra-Series Texts for 1896 will doubtless be the Second Part of the prose Romance of *Mclusine*—Introduction, with ten facsimiles of the best woodblocks of the old foreign black-letter editions, Glossary, &c., by A. K. Donald, B.A.; and a new edition of the famous Early-English Dictionary (English and Latin), *Promptorium Parvulorum*, from the Winchester MS., ab. 1440 A.D.: in this, the Editor, the Rev. A. L. Mayhew, M.A., will follow and print his MS. not only in its arrangement of nouns first, and verbs second, under every letter of the Alphabet, but also in its giving of the flexions of the words. The Society's edition will thus be the first modern one that really represents its original, a point on which Mr. Mayhew's insistence will meet with the sympathy of all our Members.

For 1897, the Original-Series Texts are, No. 108, *Child-Marriages and -Divorces, Troth-plights, Adulteries, Affiliations, Libels, Wills, Miscellanca, Clandestine Marriages*, Depositions in Trials in the Bishop's Court, Chester, A.D. 1561-6, with *Entries from the Chester Mayors' Books*, 1558-1600, ed. Dr. F. J. Furnivall,—a most curious volume, full of the social life of its time;—and Part II of the *Prymer* or *Lay-Folks' Prayer-book*, edited by Mr. Henry Littlehales, with a Paper by Mr. Bishop on the Origin and Growth of the *Prymer*.

The Extra-Series Texts for 1897 will probably be Dr. Norman Moore's re-edition of *The Book of the Foundation of St. Bartholomew's Hospital, London*, from the unique MS. ab. 1425, which gives an account of the Founder, Rahere, and the miraculous cures wrought at the Hospital;—Lydgate's *Assembly of the Gods*, ed. Dr. Oscar L. Triggs, and *The Craft of Nombrynye*, with other of the earliest english Treatises on Arithmetic, edited by R. Steele, B.A., or *Alexander Scott's Poems*, 1568, from the unique Edinburgh MS., ed. A. K. Donald, B.A.

The first Original-Series Text for 1898 will be No. 110, *Queen Elizabeth's Englishings of Boethius de Consolatione*, Plutarch's *De Curiositate*, and part of Horace, *De Arte Poetica*, edited from the unique MS. (a portion in the Queen's own hand) in the Public Record Office, London, by the late Miss C. Pemberton, with a Facsimile, and a note on the Queen's use of *i* for long *e*.

During 1892, two unexpected sources of help to the Society sprang up. First, Mr. Henry Littlehales of Bexley Heath, who had printed a MS. of the English *Prymer*, ab. 1400 A.D., kindly offered to copy, and pay for the setting, not only of the Cambridge University MS of the *Prymer*, ab. 1425 A.D., but also of a series of extracts from the Rochester Diocesan Registers, illustrating the religious condition and social life of the diocese.

The second promise of help came, most gratifyingly, from the University of Chicago. Two Professors in the English Department there, Mr. MacClintock and Mr. Oscar Triggs—with the

assent of their Principal, Dr. Harper—agreed to edit and print at the Chicago University Press, two Early English Texts to be issued jointly by the University and the E. E. T. Society, the Society paying for its electrotypes. Prof. MacClintock chose the theological collection of John Lacy of Newcastle, A. D. 1434, and Prof. Triggs chose Lydgate's *Assembly of the Gods*. The latter of these is now at press in Chicago.

Such relief as the E. E. T. Soc. gets from the above-named helpers will be devoted to its Reprinting Fund. The out-of-print Texts for 1866 are greatly wanted by members and collectors to complete their sets of the Society's publications.

An urgent appeal is hereby made to Members to increase the list of Subscribers to the E. E. Text Society. It is nothing less than a scandal that the Hellenic Society should have nearly 1000 members, while the Early English Text Society has only about 300!

The Original-Series Texts for 1898 and 1899 will be chosen from books already at press: Part II of the *Minor Poems of the Vernon MS.*, edited by Dr. F. J. Furnivall; Mr. Gollancz's re-edited *Exeter-Book*—Anglo-Saxon Poems from the unique MS. in Exeter Cathedral—Part II; Dr. Bruce's Introduction to *The English Conquest of Ireland*, Part II; Dr. Furnivall's edition of the *Lichfield Gilds*, which is all printed, and waits only for the Introduction, that Prof. E. C. K. Gonner has kindly undertaken to write for the book. Prof. Mead has sent to press the completion of the prose *Merlin*, for which the Society has been looking in vain from its Treasurer since 1870. Miss Mary Bateson has at press George Ashby's *Active Policy of a Prince*, &c., from the unique MS, A. D. 1463. Mr. Utley is home from Roumania, and promises to finish *Lynndesay's* Works this year. Dr. G. Herzfeld's re-edition of the Anglo-Saxon *Martyrology* is all in type. Part II of Dr. Holthausen's *Vices and Virtues* needs only its Glossary.

Mr. Steele has in type, besides the earliest Treatise on *Arithmetic*, englished from Johannes de *Sacro Bosco*, two prose englishings of the *Secreta Secretorum* from MSS. at Lambeth, the second of which is very rich in new words. A version by James Yonge in 1428, made for the Earl of Ormonde, has been copied from its Rawlinson MS. at Oxford, and collated with the later Lambeth MS. All three versions differ widely.

The Texts for the Extra Series in 1898 and 1899 will be chosen from *The Three Kings' Sons*, Part II, the Introduction &c. by Dr. Leon Kellner; *The Towneley Plays*, re-edited from the unique MS. by Mr. George England and A. W. Pollard, M.A.; Part II of *The Chester Plays*, re-edited from the MSS., with a full collation of the formerly missing Devonshire MS., by Mr. G. England (at press); the Parallel-Text of the only two MSS. of the *Owl and Nightingale*, edited by Mr. G. F. H. Sykes (at press); Hoccleve's englishing of *De Regimine Principum*, 1411-12, and Robert of Brunne's *Handlyng Synne*, edited by Dr. Furnivall; Deguillaume's *Pilgrimage of the Life of Man*, three prose versions—two English, one French—edited by G. N. Currie, M.A. Some of these Texts will be ready in 1894.

**Members are therefore askt to send Advance Subscriptions for 1895, 1896, 1897 and 1898**, in order that the 1895-8 books may be issued to them as soon as the editions are finishd. The Society's experience has shown that Editors must be taken when they are in the humour for work. All real Students and furtherers of the Society's purpose will be ready to push-on the issue of Texts. Those Members who care only a guinea a year (or can afford only that sum) for the history of our language and our nation's thought, will not be hurt by those who care more, getting their books in advance; on the contrary, they will be benefited, as each successive year's work will then be ready for issue on New Year's Day. Members are askt to realise the fact that the Society has now 50 years' work on its Lists,—at its present rate of production,—and that there is from 100 to 200 more years' work to come after that. The year 2000 will not see finishd all the Texts that the Society ought to print.

Mr. G. N. Currie is preparing an edition of the 15th and 16th century Prose Versions of Guillaume de Deguillaume's *Pilgrimage of the Life of Man*, with the French prose version by Jean Gallopes, from Mr. Henry Hucks Gibbs's MS., Mr. Gibbs having generously promist to pay the extra cost of printing the French text, and engraving one or two of the illuminations in his MS.

Guillaume de Deguillaume, monk of the Cistercian abbey of Chaalis, in the diocese of Senlis, wrote his first verse *Pelerinage de l'Homme* in 1330-1 when he was 36.<sup>1</sup> Twenty-five (or six) years after, in 1355, he revised his poem, and issued a second version of it, and this is the only one that has been printed. Of the prose representative of the first version, 1330-1, a prose Englishing, about 1430 A. D., was edited by Mr. Aldis Wright for the Roxburghe Club in 1869, from MS. Ff. 5. 30 in the Cambridge University Library. Other copies of this prose English are in the Hunterian Museum, Glasgow, Q. 2. 25; Univ. Coll. and Corpus Christi, Oxford<sup>2</sup>; and the Laud Collection in the Bodleian, no. 740. A copy in the Northern dialect is MS. G. 21, in St. John's Coll., Cambridge, and this is the MS. which will be edited by Mr. Sidney J. Herrtage for the E. E. Text Society. The Laud MS. 740 was somewhat condense and modernised, in the 17th century, into MS. Ff. 6. 30, in the Cambridge University Lib-

<sup>1</sup> He was born about 1295. See Abbé GOUJER'S *Bibliothèque française*, Vol. IX, p. 73-4.—P. M.

<sup>2</sup> These 3 MSS. have not yet been collated, but are believed to be all of the same version.

rary:<sup>1</sup> "The Pilgrime or the Pilgrimage of Man in this World," copied by Will. Baspoole, whose copy "was verbatim written by Walter Parker, 1645, and from thence transcribed by G. G. 1649; and from thence by W. A. 1655." This last copy may have been read by, or its story reported to, Bunyan, and may have been the groundwork of his *Pilgrim's Progress*. It will be edited by Mr. Currie for the E. E. T. Soc., its text running under the earlier English, as in Mr. Herbage's edition of the *Gesta Romanorum* for the Society. In February 1464,<sup>2</sup> Jean Gallopes—a clerk of Angers, afterwards chaplain to John, Duke of Bedford, Regent of France—turned Deguilleville's first verse *Pelerinaige* into a prose *Pèlerinage de la vie humaine*.<sup>3</sup> By the kindness of Mr. Hy. Hucks Gibbs, as above mentiond, Gallopes's French text will be printed opposite the early prose northern Englishing in the Society's edition.

The Second Version of Deguilleville's *Pelerinaige de l'Homme*, A. D. 1355 or -6, was englished in verse by Lydgate in 1426. Of Lydgate's poem, the larger part is in the Cotton MS. Vitellius C. xiii (leaves 2-308). This MS. leaves out Chaucer's englishing of Deguilleville's *A B C* or *Prayer to the Virgin*, of which the successive stanzas start with A, B, C, and run all thro' the alphabet; and it has 2 gaps, of which most of the second can be filld up from the end of the other imperfect MS. Cotton, Tiberius A vii. The rest of the stopgaps must be got from the original French in Harleian 4399,<sup>4</sup> and Additional 22,937<sup>5</sup> and 25,594<sup>6</sup> in the British Museum. Lydgate's version will be edited in due course for the Society.

Besides his first *Pelerinaige de l'homme* in its two versions, Deguilleville wrote a second, "de l'ame separee du corps," and a third, "de nostre seigneur Iesus." Of the second, a prose Englishing of 1413, *The Pilgrimage of the Soule* (perhaps in part by Lydgate), exists in the Egerton MS. 615,<sup>7</sup> at Hatfield, Cambridge (Univ. Kk. I. 7, Caius), Oxford (Univ. Coll. and Corpus), and in Caxton's edition of 1483. This version has 'somewhat of addicions' as Caxton says, and some shortenings too, as the maker of both, the first translator, tells us in the MSS. Caxton leaves out the earlier englisher's interesting Epilog in the Egerton MS. This prose englishing of the *Soule* will be edited for the Society after that of the *Man* is finisht, and will have Gallopes's French opposite it, from Mr. Gibbs's MS., as his gift to the Society. Of the Pilgrimage of Jesus, no englishing is known.

As to the MS. Anglo-Saxon Psalters, Dr. Hy. Sweet has edited the oldest MS., the Vespasian, in his *Oldest English Texts* for the Society, and Mr. Harsley has edited the latest, c. 1150, Eadwine's Canterbury Psalter. The other MSS., except the Paris one, being interlinear versions,—some of the Roman-Latin redaction, and some of the Gallican,—Prof. Logeman has prepared for press, a Parallel-Text edition of the first twelve Psalms, to start the complete work. He will do his best to get the Paris Psalter—tho' it is not an interlinear one—into this collective edition; but the additional matter, especially in the Verse-Psalms, is very difficult to manage. If the Paris text cannot be parallelised, it will form a separate volume. The Early English Psalters are all independent versions, and will follow separately in due course.

Through the good offices of the Examiners, some of the books for the Early-English Examinations of the University of London will be chosen from the Society's publications, the Committee having undertaken to supply such books to students at a large reduction in price. The profits from these sales, after the payment of costs arising out of the issuing of such Texts to Students, will be applied to the Society's Reprints. Five of its 1866 Texts, and one of its 1867 (now at press), still need reproducing. Donations for this purpose will be welcome. They should be paid to the Hon. Sec., Mr. W. A. Dalziel, 67 Victoria Rd., Finsbury Park, London, N.

Members are reminded that *fresh Subscribers are always wanted*, and that the Committee can at any time, on short notice, send to press an additional Thousand Pounds' worth of work.

The Subscribers to the Original Series must be prepared for the issue of the whole of the Early English *Lives of Saints*, sooner or later. The Society cannot leave out any of them, even though some are dull. The Sinners would doubtless be much more interesting. But in many Saints' Lives will be found valuable incidental details of our forefathers' social state, and all are worthful for the history of our language. The Lives may be lookt on as the religious romances or story-books of their period.

The Standard Collection of Saints' Lives in the Corpus and Ashmole MSS., the Harleian MS. 2277, &c. will repeat the Laud set, our No. 87, with additions, and in right order. (The foundation MS. (Laud 108) had to be printed first, to prevent quite unwieldy collations.) The Supplementary Lives from the Vernon and other MSS. will form one or two separate volumes.

Besides the Saints' Lives, Trevisa's englishing of *Bartholomæus de Proprietatibus Rerum*, the mediæval Cyclopædia of Science, &c., will be the Society's next big undertaking. Dr.

<sup>1</sup> Another MS. is in the Pepys Library.

<sup>2</sup> According to Mr. Hy. Hucks Gibbs's MS.

<sup>3</sup> These were printed in France, late in the 15th or early in the 16th century.

<sup>4</sup> 15th cent., containing only the *Vie humaine*.

<sup>5</sup> 15th cent., containing all the 3 Pilgrimages, the 3rd being Jesus Christ's.

<sup>6</sup> 14th cent., containing the *Vie humaine* and the 2nd Pilgrimage, *de l'Âme*: both incomplete.

<sup>7</sup> Ab. 1430, 106 leaves (leaf 1 of text wanting), with illuminations of nice little devils—red, green, tawny &c.—and damnd souls, fires, angels &c.

R. von Fleischhacker will edit it. Prof. Napier of Oxford, wishing to have the whole of our MS. Anglo-Saxon in type, and accessible to students, will edit for the Society all the unprinted and other Anglo-Saxon Homilies which are not included in Thorpe's edition of Ælfric's prose,<sup>1</sup> Dr. Morris's of the Blickling Homilies, and Prof. Skeat's of Ælfric's Metrical Homilies. Prof. Kölbing has also undertaken for the Society's Extra Series a Parallel-Text of all the six MSS. of the *Ancoren Riwle*, one of the most important foundation-documents of Early English. Mr. Harvey, too, means to prepare an edition of the three MSS. of the *Earliest English Metrical Psalter*, one of which was edited by the late Mr. Stevenson for the Surtees Society.

In case more Texts are ready at any time than can be paid for by the current year's income, they will be dated the next year, and issued in advance to such Members as will pay advance subscriptions. The 1886-7 delay in getting out Texts must not occur again, if it can possibly be avoided. The Director has in hand for future volunteer Editors, copies of 2 or 3 MSS.

Members of the Society will learn with pleasure that its example has been followed, not only by the Old French Text Society which has done such admirable work under its founders Profs. Paul Meyer and Gaston Paris, but also by the Early Russian Text Society, which was set on foot in 1877, and has since issued many excellent editions of old MS. Chronicles &c.

Members will also note with pleasure the annexation of large tracts of our Early English territory by the important German contingent under General Zupitza, Colonels Kölbing and Horstmann, volunteers Hausknecht, Einkenkel, Haenisch, Kaluza, Hupe, Adam, Holthausen, Schick, &c. &c. Scandinavia has also sent us Prof. Erdmann; Holland, Prof. H. Logeman, who is now working in Belgium; France, Prof. Paul Meyer—with Gaston Paris as adviser;—Italy, Prof. Lattanzi; Hungary, Dr. von Fleischhacker; while America is represented by Prof. Child, Dr. Mary Noyes Colvin, Profs. Mead, Perrin, McClintock, Triggs, &c. The sympathy, the ready help, which the Society's work has cald forth from the Continent and the United States, have been among the pleasantest experiences of the Society's life, a real aid and cheer amid all troubles and discouragements. All our Members are grateful for it, and recognise that the bond their work has woven between them and the lovers of language and antiquity across the seas is one of the most welcome results of the Society's efforts.

### ORIGINAL SERIES.

Half the Publications for 1866 (13, 14, 15, 18, 22) are out of print, but will be gradually reprinted. Subscribers who desire the issue for 1866 should send their guineas at once to the Hon. Secretary, in order that other Texts for 1866 may be sent to press.

*The Publications for 1864-1897 (one guinea each year, save those for 1866 now half out of print, two guineas) are:—*

- |  |          |                  |
|--|----------|------------------|
| 1. Early English Alliterative Poems, ab. 1360 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris.                          | 16s.     | 1864             |
| 2. Arthur, ab. 1440, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A.   | 4s.      | "                |
| 3. Lauder on the Dewtie of Kyngis, &c., 1556, ed. F. Hall, D.C.L.                                    | 4s.      | "                |
| 4. Sir Gawayne and the Green Knight, ab. 1360, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris.                               | 10s.     | "                |
| 5. Hume's Orthographie and Congruitie of the Britan Tongue, ab. 1617, ed. H. B. Wheatley.            | 4s.      | 1865             |
| 6. Lancelot of the Laik, ab. 1500, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat.   | 8s.      | "                |
| 7. Genesis & Exodus, ab. 1250, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris.   | 8s.      | "                |
| 8. Morte Arthure, ab. 1440, ed. E. Brock.  | 7s.      | "                |
| 9. Thynne on Speght's ed. of Chaucer, A.D. 1599, ed. Dr. G. Kingsley and Dr. F. J. Furnivall.        | 10s.     | "                |
| 10. Merlin, ab. 1440, Part I., ed. H. B. Wheatley.   | 2s. 6d.  | "                |
| 11. Lyndesay's Monarchie, &c., 1552, Part I., ed. J. Small, M.A.                                     | 3s.      | "                |
| 12. Wright's Chaste Wife, ab. 1462, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A.  | 1s.      | "                |
| 13. Seinte Marherete, 1200-1330, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne; to be re-edited by Prof. Herford, M.A., Ph.D. |          | 1866             |
| 14. Kyng Horn, Floris and Blanchefour, &c., ed. Rev. J. R. Lumby, B.D.                               |          | "                |
| 15. Political, Religious, and Love Poems, ed. F. J. Furnivall.                                       |          | "                |
| 16. The Book of Quinte Essence, ab. 1460-70, ed. F. J. Furnivall.                                    | 1s.      | [In print.]      |
| 17. Parallel Extracts from 45 MSS. of Piers the Plowman, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat.                       | 1s.      | [In print.]      |
| 18. Hali Meidenhad, ab. 1200, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne.  |          | "                |
| 19. Lyndesay's Monarchie, &c., Part II., ed. J. Small, M.A.  | 3s. 6d.  | [In print.]      |
| 20. Hampole's English Prose Treatises, ed. Rev. G. G. Perry.   | 1s.      | [In print.]      |
| 21. Merlin, Part II., ed. H. B. Wheatley.  | 4s.      | [In print.]      |
| 22. Partenay or Lusignen, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat.  |          | "                |
| 23. Dan Michel's Ayenbite of Inwyt, 1340, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris.                                    | 10s. 6d. | [In print.]      |
| 24. Hymns to the Virgin and Christ; the Parliament of Devils, &c., ab. 1430, ed. F. J. Furnivall.    |          | [At Press. 1867] |
| 25. The Stacions of Rome, the Pilgrims' Sea-voyage, with Clene Maydenhod, ed. F. J. Furnivall.       | 1s.      | "                |
| 26. Religious Pieces in Prose and Verse, from R. Thornton's MS. (ab. 1440), ed. Rev. G. G. Perry.    | 2s.      | "                |
| 27. Levens's Manipulus Vocabulorum, a ryming Dictionary, 1570, ed. H. B. Wheatley.                   | 12s.     | "                |

<sup>1</sup> Of these, Mr. Harsley is preparing a new edition, with collations of all the MSS. Many copies of Thorpe's book, not issued by the Ælfric Society, are still in stock.

Of the Vercelli Homilies, the Society has bought the copy made by Prof. G. Lattanzi.



23. William's Vision of Piers the Plowman, 1362 A.D.; Text A, Part I., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 6s.	1867
24. Old English Homilies (ab. 1220-30 A.D.). Part I. Edited by Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 7s.	"
25. Pierce the Ploughman's Crede, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 2s.	"
26. Myro's Duties of a Parish Priest, in Verse, ab. 1420 A.D., ed. B. Peacock. 4s.	1868
27. Early English Meals and Manners: the Boke of Nourture of John Russell, the Bokes of Keruyng, Curtasye, and Demeanor, the Babees Book, Urbanitatis, &c., ed. F. J. Furnivall. 12s.	"
28. The Knight de la Tour Landry, ab. 1440 A.D. A Book for Daughters, ed. T. Wright, M.A. 8s.	"
29. Old English Homilies (before 1300 A.D.). Part II., ed. R. Morris, LL.D. 8s.	"
30. Lyndesay's Works, Part III.: The Historie and Testament of Squyer Meldrum, ed. F. Hall. 2s.	"
31. Merlin, Part III. Ed. H. B. Wheatley. On Arthurian Localities, by J. S. Stuart Glennie. 12s.	1869
32. Sir David Lyndesay's Works, Part IV., Ane Satyre of the Three Estaitis. Ed. F. Hall, D.C.L. 4s.	"
33. William's Vision of Piers the Plowman, Part II. Text B. Ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 10s. 6d.	"
34. Alliterative Romance of the Destruction of Troy. Ed. D. Donaldson & G. A. Panton. Pt. I. 10s. 6d.	"
35. English Gilds, their Statutes and Customs, 1389 A.D. Edit. Toulmin Smith and Lucy T. Smith, with an Essay on Gilds and Trades-Unions, by Dr. L. Brentano. 21s.	1870
36. William Lauder's Minor Poems. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. 3s.	"
37. Bernardus De Cura Rei Familiaris, Early Scottish Prophecies, &c. Ed. J. R. Lumby, M.A. 2s.	"
38. Ratis Raving, and other Moral and Religious Pieces. Ed. J. R. Lumby, M.A. 3s.	"
39. The Alliterative Romance of Joseph of Arimathie, or The Holy Grail: from the Vernon MS.; with W. de Worde's and Pynson's Lives of Joseph: ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 5s.	1871
40. King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care, edited from 2 MSS., with an English translation, by Henry Sweet, Esq., B.A., Balliol College, Oxford. Part I. 10s.	"
41. Legends of the Holy Rood, Symbols of the Passion and Cross Poems, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s.	"
42. Sir David Lyndesay's Works, Part V., ed. Dr. J. A. H. Murray. 3s.	"
43. The Times' Whistle, and other Poems, by R. C., 1616; ed. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 6s.	"
44. An Old English Miscellany, containing a Bestiary, Kentish Sermons, Proverbs of Alfred, and Religious Poems of the 13th cent., ed. from the MSS. by the Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. 10s.	1872
45. King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care, ed. H. Sweet, M.A. Part II. 10s.	"
46. The Life of St Juliana, 2 versions, A.D. 1230, with translations; ed. T. O. Cockayne & E. Brock. 2s.	"
47. Palladius on Husbandrie, english (ab. 1420 A.D.), ed. Rev. Barton Lodge, M.A. Part I. 10s.	"
48. Old-English Homilies, Series II., and three Hymns to the Virgin and God, 13th-century, with the music to two of them, in old and modern notation; ed. Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. 8s.	1873
49. The Vision of Piers Plowman, Text C: Richard the Redeles (by William, the author of the <i>Vision</i> ) and The Crowned King; Part III., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 18s.	"
50. Generydes, a Romance, ab. 1440 A.D., ed. W. Aldis Wright, M.A. Part I. 3s.	"
51. The Gest Hystoriale of the Destruction of Troy, in alliterative verse; ed. by D. Donaldson, Esq., and the late Rev. G. A. Panton. Part II. 10s. 6d.	1874
52. The Early English Version of the "Cursor Mundi"; in four Texts, edited by the Rev. R. Morris, M.A., LL.D. Part I, with 2 photolithographic facsimiles. 10s. 6d.	"
53. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. Part I. 8s.	"
54. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part II. 15s.	1875
55. Meditacyuns on the Soper of our Lorde (by Robert of Brunne), edited by J. M. Cowper. 2s. 6d.	"
56. The Romance and Prophecies of Thomas of Erceeldoune, from 5 MSS.; ed. Dr. J. A. H. Murray. 10s. 6d.	"
57. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part III. 15s.	1876
58. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part II. 7s.	"
59. Francis Thynne's Embleames and Epigrams, A.D. 1600, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 7s.	"
60. Be Domes Dæge (Bede's <i>De Die Judicii</i> ), &c., ed. J. R. Lumby, B.D. 2s.	"
61. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part IV., with 2 autotypes. 10s.	1877
62. Notes on Piers Plowman, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. Part I. 21s.	"
63. The "Cursor Mundi," in 4 Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part V. 25s.	1878
64. Adam Davie's 5 Dreams about Edward II., &c., ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 5s.	"
65. Generydes, a Romance, ed. W. Aldis Wright, M.A. Part II. 4s.	"
66. The Lay Folks Mass-Book, four texts, ed. Rev. Canon Simmons. 25s.	1879
67. Palladius on Husbandrie, english (ab. 1420 A.D.). Part II. Ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A. 15s.	"
68. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part III. 10s.	1880
69. English Works of Wyclif, hitherto unprinted, ed. F. D. Matthew, Esq. 20s.	"
70. Catholicon Anglicum, an early English Dictionary, from Lord Monson's MS. A.D. 1483, ed., with Introduction & Notes, by S. J. Herrtage, B.A.; and with a Preface by H. B. Wheatley. 20s.	1881
71. Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints, in MS. Cott. Jul. E 7., ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A. Part I. 10s.	"
72. Beowulf, the unique MS. autotyped and transliterated, edited by Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D. 25s.	1882
73. The Fifty Earliest English Wills, in the Court of Probate, 1387-1439, ed. by F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 7s.	"
74. King Alfred's Orosius, from Lord Tollemache's 9th century MS., Part I, ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 13s.	1883
<i>Extra Volume.</i> Facsimile of the Epinal Glossary, 8th cent., ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 15s.	"
75. The Early-English Life of St. Katherine and its Latin Original, ed. Dr. Einkenel. 12s.	1884
76. Piers Plowman: Notes, Glossary, &c. Part IV, completing the work, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A. 18s.	"
77. Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints, MS. Cott. Jul. E 7., ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A., LL.D. Part II. 12s.	1885
78. The Oldest English Texts, Charters, &c., ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 20s.	"
79. Additional Analogs to 'The Wright's Chaste Wife,' No. 12, by W. A. Clouston. 1s.	1886
80. The Three Kings of Cologne. 2 English Texts, and 1 Latin, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 17s.	"

86. Prose Lives of Women Saints, ab. 1610 A.D., ed. from the unique MS. by Dr. C. Horstmann. 12s.	1886
87. Early English Verse Lives of Saints (earliest version), Laud MS. 108, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 20s.	1887
88. Hy. Bradshaw's Life of St. Werburge (Pynson, 1521), ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 10s.	"
89. Vices and Virtues, from the unique MS., ab. 1200 A.D., ed. Dr. F. Holthausen. Part I. 8s.	1888
90. Anglo-Saxon and Latin Rule of St. Benet, interlinear Glosses, ed. Dr. H. Logeman. 12s.	"
91. Two Fifteenth-Century Cookery-Books, ab. 1430-1450, edited by Mr. T. Austin. 10s.	"
92. Eadwine's Canterbury Psalter, from the Trin. Cambr. MS., ab. 1150 A.D., ed. F. Harsley, B.A. Pt. I. 12s.	1890
93. Defensor's Liber Scintillarum, edited from the MSS. by Ernest Rhodes. B.A. 12s.	"
94. Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints, MS. Cott. Jul. E 7, Part III., ed. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D. 12s.	1890
95. The Old-English version of Bede's Ecclesiastical History, re-edited by Dr. Thomas Miller. Part I. 18s.	"
(With Reprints of No. 16, The Book of Quinte Essence, and No. 26, Religious Pieces, from R. Thornton's MS.)	
96. The Old-English version of Bede's Ecclesiastical History, re-edited by Dr. Thomas Miller. Pt. II. 15s.	1891
97. The Earliest English Prose Psalter, edited from its 2 MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring. Part I. 15s.	"
98. Minor Poems of the Vernon MS., Part I., ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 20s.	1892
99. Cursor Mundi. Part VI. Preface, Notes, and Glossary, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s.	"
100. Capgrave's Life of St. Katharine, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann, with Forewords by Dr. Furnivall. 20s.	1893
101. Cursor Mundi. Part VII. Essay on the MSS., their Dialects, &c., by Dr. H. Hupe. 10s.	"
102. Lanfranc's Chirurgie, ab. 1400 A.D., ed. Dr. R. von Fleischhacker. Part I. 20s.	1894
103. The Legend of the Cross, from a 12th century MS., &c., ed. Prof. A. S. Napier, M.A., Ph.D. 7s. 6d.	"
104. The Exeter Book (Anglo-Saxon Poems), re-edited from the unique MS. by I. Gollancz, M.A. Part I. 20s.	1895
105. The Prymer or Lay-Folks' Prayer-Book, Camb. Univ. MS., ab. 1420, ed. Henry Littlehales. Part I. 10s.	"
106. R. Misyn's Fire of Love and Mending of Life (Hampole), 1434, 1435, ed. Rev. R. Harvey, M.A. 15s.	1896
107. The English Conquest of Ireland, A.D. 1166-1185, 2 Texts, 1425, 1440, Pt. I., ed. Dr. Furnivall. 15s.	"
108. Child-Marriages and -Divorces, Trothplights, &c. Chester Depositions, 1561-6, ed. Dr. Furnivall. 15s.	1897
109. The Prymer or Lay-Folks' Prayer-Book, ab. 1420, ed. Henry Littlehales. Part II. 10s.	"
110. Queen Elizabeth's Englishings of Boethius, Plutarch &c. &c., ed. Miss C. Pemberton. 15s.	1898
111.	"
112.	1899
113.	"

### EXTRA SERIES.

*The Publications for 1867-1895 (one guinea each year) are:—*

I. William of Palerne; or, William and the Werwolf. Re-edited by Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 13s.	1867
II. Early English Pronunciation with especial Reference to Shakspere and Chaucer, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part I. 10s.	"
III. Caxton's Book of Curtesye, in Three Versions. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. 5s.	1868
IV. Havelok the Dane. Re-edited by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 10s.	"
V. Chaucer's Boethius. Edited from the two best MSS. by Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 12s.	"
VI. Chevelere Assigne. Re-edited from the unique MS. by H. H. Gibbs, Esq., M.A. 3s.	"
VII. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part II. 10s.	1869
VIII. Queene Elizabethes Achademy, &c. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. Essays on early Italian and German Books of Courtesy, by W. M. Rossetti and Dr. E. Oswald. 13s.	"
IX. Awdley's Fraterniteye of Vacabondes, Harman's Caveat, &c. Ed. E. Viles & F. J. Furnivall. 7s. 6d.	"
X. Andrew Boorde's Introduction of Knowledge, 1547, Dyetary of Helth, 1542, Barnes in Defence of the Berde, 1542-3. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. 18s.	1870
XI. Barbour's Bruce, Part I. Ed. from MSS. and editions, by Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 12s.	"
XII. England in Henry VIII.'s Time: a Dialogue between Cardinal Pole & Lupset, by Thom. Starkey, Chaplain to Henry VIII. Ed. J. M. Cowper. Part II. 12s. (Part I. is No. XXXII, 1878, 6s.)	1871
XIII. A Supplicacyon of the Beggars, by Simon Fish, 1528-9 A.D., ed. F. J. Furnivall; with A Supplication to our Moste Soueraigne Lorde; A Supplication of the Poore Commons; and The Decaye of England by the Great Multitude of Sheep, ed. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 6s.	"
XIV. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part III. 10s.	"
XV. Robert Crowley's Thirty-One Epigrams, Voyce of the Last Trumpet, Way to Wealth, &c., A.D. 1550-1, edited by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 12s.	1872
XVI. Chaucer's Treatise on the Astrolabe. Ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 6s.	"
XVII. The Complaynt of Scotlande, 1549 A.D., with 4 Tracts (1542-48), ed. Dr. Murray. Part I. 10s.	"
XVIII. The Complaynt of Scotlande, 1549 A.D., ed. Dr. Murray. Part II. 8s.	1873
XIX. Oure Ladyes Myroure, A.D. 1530, ed. Rev. J. H. Blunt, M.A. 24s.	"
XX. Lonelich's History of the Holy Grail (ab. 1450 A.D.), ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part I. 8s.	1874
XXI. Barbour's Bruce, Part II., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 4s.	"
XXII. Henry Brinklow's Complaynt of Roderyk Mors (ab. 1542): and The Lamentacion of a Christian against the Citie of London, made by Roderigo Mors, A.D. 1545. Ed. J. M. Cowper. 9s.	"
XXIII. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part IV. 10s.	"
XXIV. Lonelich's History of the Holy Grail, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part II. 10s.	1875
XXV. Guy of Warwick, 15th-century Version, ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part I. 20s.	"
XXVI. Guy of Warwick, 15th-century Version, ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part II. 14s.	1876
XXVII. Bp. Fisher's English Works died (1535), ed. by Prof. J. E. B. Mayor. Part I, the Text. 16s.	"

XXVIII. Lonelich's Holy Grail, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part III. 10s.	1877
XXIX. Barbour's Bruce. Part III., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 21s.	"
XXX. Lonelich's Holy Grail, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part IV. 15s.	1878
XXXI. The Alliterative Romance of Alexander and Dindimus, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 6s.	"
XXXII. Starkey's "England in Henry VIII's time." Pt. I. Starkey's Life and Letters, ed. S. J. Herrtage. 8s.	"
XXXIII. Gesta Romanorum (englisht ab. 1440), ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A. 15s.	1879
XXXIV. The Charlemagne Romances:—1. Sir Ferumbras, from Ashm. MS. 33, ed. S. J. Herrtage. 15s.	"
XXXV. Charlemagne Romances:—2. The Sege off Melayne, Sir Otuel, &c., ed. S. J. Herrtage. 12s.	1880
XXXVI. Charlemagne Romances:—3. Lyf of Charles the Grete, Pt. I., ed. S. J. Herrtage. 16s.	"
XXXVII. Charlemagne Romances:—4. Lyf of Charles the Grete, Pt. II., ed. S. J. Herrtage. 15s.	1881
XXXVIII. Charlemagne Romances:—5. The Sowdone of Babylone, ed. Dr. Hausknecht. 15s.	"
XXXIX. Charlemagne Romances:—6. Rauf Colyore, Roland, Otuel, &c., ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A. 15s.	1882
XL. Charlemagne Romances:—7. Huon of Burdeux, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Part I. 15s.	"
XLI. Charlemagne Romances:—8. Huon of Burdeux, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Pt. II. 15s.	1883
XLII. Guy of Warwick: 2 texts (Auchinleck MS. and Caius MS.), ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part I. 15s.	"
XLIII. Charlemagne Romances:—9. Huon of Burdeux, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Pt. III. 15s.	1884
XLIV. Charlemagne Romances:—10. The Four Sons of Aymon, ed. Miss Octavia Richardson. Pt. I. 15s.	"
XLV. Charlemagne Romances:—11. The Four Sons of Aymon, ed. Miss O. Richardson. Pt. II. 20s.	1885
XLVI. Sir Bevis of Hamton, from the Auchinleck and other MSS., ed. Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D. Part I. 10s.	"
XLVII. The Wars of Alexander, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D. 20s.	1886
XLVIII. Sir Bevis of Hamton, ed. Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D. Part II. 10s.	"
XLIX. Guy of Warwick: 2 texts (Auchinleck and Caius MSS.), Pt. II., ed. Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D. 15s.	1887
L. Charlemagne Romances:—12. Huon of Burdeux, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Part IV. 5s.	"
LI. Torrent of Portyngale, from the unique MS. in the Chetham Library, ed. E. Adam, Ph.D. 10s.	"
LII. Bullein's Dialogue against the Feuer Pestilence, 1578 (ed. 1, 1564). Ed. M. & A. H. Bullen. 10s.	1888
LIII. Vicary's Anatomie of the Body of Man, 1548, ed. 1577, ed. F. J. & Percy Furnivall. Part I. 15s.	"
LIV. Caxton's Englishing of Alain Chartier's Curial, ed. Dr. F. J. Furnivall & Prof. P. Meyer. 5s.	"
LV. Barbour's Bruce, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D. Part IV. 5s.	1889
LVI. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Pt. V., the present English Dialects. 25s.	"
LVII. Caxton's Eneydos, A.D. 1490, coll. with its French, ed. M. T. Culley, M.A., & Dr. F. J. Furnivall. 13s.	1890
LVIII. Caxton's Blanchardyn & Eglantine, c. 1489, extracts from ed. 1595, & French, ed. Dr. L. Kellner. 17s.	"
LIX. Guy of Warwick, 2 texts (Auchinleck and Caius MSS.), Part III., ed. Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D. 15s.	1891
LX. Lydgate's Temple of Glass, re-edited from the MSS. by Dr. J. Schick. 15s.	"
LXI. Hoccleve's Minor Poems, I., from the Phillipps and Durham MSS., ed. F. J. Furnivall, Ph.D. 15s.	1892
LXII. The Chester Plays, re-edited from the MSS. by the late Dr. Hermann Deimling. Part I. 15s.	"
LXIII. Thomas a Kempis's De Imitatione Christi, englisht ab. 1440, & 1502, ed. Prof. J. K. Ingram. 15s.	1893
LXIV. Caxton's Godfrey of Boloyne, or Last Siege of Jerusalem, 1481, ed. Dr. Mary N. Colvin. 15s.	"
LXV. Sir Bevis of Hamton, ed. Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D. Part III. 15s.	1894
LXVI. Lydgate's and Burgh's Secrees of Philisoffes, ab. 1445—50, ed. R. Steele, B.A. 15s.	"
LXVII. The Three Kings' Sons, a Romance, ab. 1500, Part I., the Text, ed. Dr. Furnivall. 10s.	1895
LXVIII. Melusine, the prose Romance, ab. 1500, Part I., the Text, ed. A. K. Donald. 20s.	"
LXIX. (?) Melusine, the Prose Romance, ab. 1500, Part II., Introduction by A. K. Donald. 1896	"
LXX. (?) Promptorium Parvulorum, c. 1440, from the Winchester MS., ed. Rev. A. L. Mayhew, M.A. Part I., 1897	"
LXXI. (?) Lydgate's Assembly of the Gods, ed. Prof. Oscar L. Triggs, Ph.D. 1897	"
LXXII. (?) The Towneley Plays, ed. Geo. England and A. W. Pollard, M.A. 1898	"
LXXIII. 1898	"
LXXIV. 1898	"

## EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY TEXTS PREPARING.

Besides the Texts named as at press on p. 12 of the Cover of the Early English Text Society's last books, the following Texts are also slowly preparing for the Society:—

### ORIGINAL SERIES.

- Thomas Robinson's Life and Death of Mary Magdalene, from the 2 MSS., ab. 1620 A.D. (*Text in type*)  
 The Earliest English Prose Psalter, ed. Dr. K. D. Buebring. Part II.  
 The Earliest English Verse Psalter, 3 texts, ed. Rev. R. Harvey, M.A.  
 Anglo-Saxon Poems, from the Vercelli MS., re-edited by I. Gollancz, M.A.  
 Anglo-Saxon Glosses to Latin Prayers and Hymns, edited by Dr. F. Holthausen.  
 Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints, MS. Cott. Jul. B 7, Part IV, ed. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D.  
 All the Anglo-Saxon Homilies and Lives of Saints not accessible in English editions, including those of the Vercelli MS. &c., edited by Prof. Napier, M.A., Ph.D.  
 The Anglo-Saxon Psalms; all the MSS. in Parallel Texts, ed. Dr. H. Logeman and F. Harsley, B.A.  
 Beowulf, a critical Text, &c. (*Editor wanted*)  
 Byrhtferth's Handbooc, edited by Prof. G. Hempl.  
 The Secret of Secrets, 3 prose versions from MSS., 2 at Lambeth, and one by Jas. Younge, 1420, ed. R. Steele, B.A.  
 The Rule of St. Benet: 5 Texts, Anglo-Saxon, Early English, Caxton, &c. (*Editor wanted*)

- The Seven Sages, in the Northern Dialect, from a Cotton MS. (*Editor wanted.*)  
 The Master of the Game, a Book of Huntynge for Hen. V. when Prince of Wales. (*Editor wanted.*)  
 Ailred's Rule of Nuns, &c., edited from the Vernon MS., by the Rev. Canon H. R. Bramley, M.A.  
 Lonesich's Merlin (verse), from the unique MS., ed. by Miss Mary Bateson and Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D.  
 Merlin (prose), Part IV., containing Preface, Index, and Glossary. Edited by Prof. W. E. Mead, Ph.D.  
 Early English Verse Lives of Saints, Standard Collection, from the Harl. MS.  
 Early English Confessionals, edited by Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.  
 A Lapidary, from Lord Tollemache's MS., &c., edited by Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.  
 Early English Deeds and Documents, from unique MSS., ed. Dr. Lorenz Morsbach.  
 Gilbert Banastre's Poems, and other Boccaccio englishings. (*Editor wanted.*)  
 Lanfranc's Chirurgie, ab. 1400 A.D., ed. Dr. R. von Fleischhacker, Part II.  
 William of Nassington's Mirror of Life, from Jn. of Waldby. (*Editor Wanted.*)  
 A Chronicle of England to 1327 A.D., Northern verse (42,000 lines), ab. 1400 A.D., ed. M. L. Perrin, B.A.  
 More Early English Wills from the Probate Registry at Somerset House. (*Editor Wanted.*)  
 Early Lincoln Wills and Documents from the Bishops' Registers, &c., edited by Dr. F. J. Furnivall.  
 Early Canterbury Wills, edited by William Cowper, B.A., and J. Meadows Cowper.  
 Early Norwich Wills, edited by Walter Rye, and F. J. Furnivall.  
 The Cartularies of Oseney Abbey and Godstow Nunnery, englisht ab. 1450, ed. Rev. A. Clark, M.A.  
 The Macro Moralities, edited from Mr. Gurney's unique MS., by Alfred W. Pollard, M.A.  
 A Troy-Book, edited from the unique Laud MS. 595, by Dr. E. Wulffing.  
 Alliterative Prophecies, edited from the MSS. by Prof. Brandl, Ph.D.  
 Miscellaneous Alliterative Poems, edited from the MSS. by Dr. L. Morsbach.  
 Bird and Beast Poems, a collection from MSS., edited by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.  
 Soire Mori, &c., from the Lichfield MS. 16, ed. Mrs. L. Grindon, LL.A., and Miss Florence Gilbert.  
 Nicholas Trivet's French Chronicle, from Sir A. Acland-Hood's unique MS., ed. by Miss Mary Bateson.  
 De Guilleville's Pilgrimage of the Sowls, edited by G. N. Currie, M.A.  
 Stories for Sermons, edited from the Addit. MS. 25,719 by Dr. Wieck of Coblenz.  
 Early English Homilies in Harl. 2276 &c., c. 1400, ed. J. Friedländer.  
 Extracts from the Registers of Boughton, ed. Hy. Littlehales, Esq.  
 The Diary of Prior Moore of Worcester, A.D. 1618-35, from the unique MS., ed. Henry Littlehales, Esq.  
 The Pore Caitif, edited from its MSS., by Mr. Peake.

### EXTRA SERIES.

- Vicary's Anatomie, 1548, from the unique MS. copy by George Jeans, edited by F. J. & Percy Furnivall.  
 Vicary's Anatomie, 1548, ed. 1577, edited by F. J. & Percy Furnivall. Part II. [*At Press.*]  
 Bp. Fisher's English Works, Pt. II., with his Life and Letters, ed. Rev. Ronald Bayne, B.A. [*At Press.*]  
 William Staunton's St. Patrick's Purgatory, &c., ed. J. T. Herbert, M.A.  
 A Parallel-text of the 6 MSS. of the Ancoren Riwle, ed. Prof. Dr. E. Kölbing.  
 Trevisa's Bartholomæus de Proprietatibus Rerum, re-edited by Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.  
 Bullen's Dialogue against the Feuer Pestilence, 1564, 1573, 1578. Ed. A. H. and M. Bullen. Pt. II.  
 The Romance of Boetus and Sidrac, edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.  
 The Romance of Clariodus, re-edited by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.  
 Sir Amadas, re-edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.  
 Sir Degrevant, edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. Luick.  
 Robert of Brunne's Chronicle of England, from the Inner Temple MS., ed. by Prof. W. E. Mead, Ph.D.  
 Maundeuille's Voiage and Travaile, re-edited from the Cotton MS. Titus C. 16, &c., by Miss M. Bateson.  
 Avowynge of Arthur, re-edited from the unique Ireland MS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.  
 Guy of Warwick, Copland's version, edited by Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D.  
 The Sege of Jerusalem, Text A, edited from the MSS. by Dr. F. Kopka.  
 Liber Fundacionis Ecclesie Sancti Bartholomei Londomarum: englisht ab. 1425, ed. Norman Moore, M.D.  
 Awdelay's Poems, re-edited from the unique MS. Douce 302, by Dr. E. Wulffing.  
 William of Shoreham's Works, re-edited by Professor Konrath, Ph.D.  
 The Wyse Chylde and other early Treatises on Education, Northwich School, Harl. 2009 &c., ed. G. Collar, B.A.  
 Caxton's Dictes and Sayengis of Philosophirs, 1477, with Lord Tollennache's MS. version, ed. S. I. Butler, Esq.  
 Caxton's Book of the Ordre of Chyualry, collated with Loutfut's Scotch copy, ed. F. S. Ellis, Esq.  
 Lydgate's Court of Sapience, edited by Dr. Borsdorf.  
 Lydgate's Lyfe of oure Lady, ed. by Prof. Georg Fiedler, Ph.D.  
 Lydgate's Reason and Sensuality, englisht from the French, edited by Dr. J. Schick.  
 Lydgate's Dance of Death, edited by Miss Florence Warren.  
 Lydgate's Life of St. Edmund, edited from the MSS. by Dr. Axel Erdmann.  
 Richard Coer de Lion, re-edited from Harl. MS. 4690, by Prof. Hausknecht, Ph.D.  
 The Romance of Athelstan, re-edited by Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D.  
 The Romance of Sir Degare, re-edited by Dr. Breul.  
 Mulcaster's Positions 1581, and Elementarie 1582, ed. Dr. Th. Klauer, Dresden.  
 Caxton's Recouyll of the Histories of Troye, edited by H. Halliday Sparling.  
 Walton's verse Boethius de Consolatione, edited by Dr. Liddell, U. S. A.  
 The Gospel of Nichodemus, edited by Ernest Riedel.

The Society is anxious to hear of more early Dialect MSS. John Lacy's copy, in the Newcastle-on-Tyne dialect, 1434, of some theological tracts in MS. 94 of St. John's College, Oxford, is to be edited by Prof. McClintock. More Hampoles in the Yorkshire dialect will follow. The Lincoln and Norfolk Wills, already copied by or for Dr. Furnivall, unluckily show but little traces of dialect.

More members (to bring money) and Editors (to bring brains) are wanted by the Society.





Pierce the Ploughmans Crede,

to which is appended

God spede the Plough.

**REF. & REN.**

BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 13, UNTER DEN LINDEN.  
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.  
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.



# Pierce the Ploughmans Crede

(ABOUT 1394 A.D.)

TRANSCRIBED AND EDITED FROM MS. TRIN. COLL., CAM., R. 3, 15,  
COLLATED WITH MS. BIBL. REG. 18. B. XVII. IN THE BRITISH  
MUSEUM, AND WITH THE OLD PRINTED TEXT OF 1553;

TO WHICH IS APPENDED

## God spede the Plough

(ABOUT 1500 A.D.)

FROM MS. LANSDOWNE 762;

BY THE

REV. WALTER W. SKEAT, M.A.,

LATE FELLOW OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE; AND EDITOR OF "LANGLAND'S VISION  
OF PIERS PLOWMAN," "LANCELOT OF THE LAIK," AND "THE ROMANS OF PARTEMAY."

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,  
BY KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO.,  
PATERNOSTER HOUSE, CHARING-CROSS ROAD.

1867.

[Reprinted, 1895.]

PR  
1119  
A2  
10. 30  
1.895

REF. & RET.

7155

## CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
PREFACE. § 1. The present a <i>new</i> edition. § 2. Description of the editions. I. By Wolfe (1553); II. By Owen Rogers (1561); III. By Dr Whitaker (1814); IV. By Mr Wright (1832); reprinted in 1856. § 3. Investigation of the MS. in the Brit. Museum. § 4. The Trinity MS. § 5. Results. § 6. Restoration of the original text. § 7. Printed in long lines. § 8. Some account of the poem. § 9. Books for consultation. § 10. The rise of the Mendicant Orders. § 11. Date of the poem. § 12. The author. § 13. The "Complaint of the Ploughman," or "Plowman's Tale." § 14. Dates of both poems. § 15. Fine passages in the poem. § 16. The five new lines now first printed. § 17. Glossary to the edition of 1553	i—xix
PIERCE THE PLOUGHMANS CREDE	1
Notes to the "Crede"	33
Glossarial Index	56
Index of Names	68
 GOD SPEDE THE PLOUGH	 69
Notes to "God spedde the plough"	73
Glossarial Index	75



## PREFACE.

---

### DESCRIPTION OF FORMER EDITIONS, AND OF THE MSS.

§ 1. THE present edition of "Pierce the Ploughmans Crede" may fairly be said to be almost entirely a *new* one; the *Text* being new throughout, as is also a large part both of the Notes and Glossary. In order to explain whence this new text is derived, it will be proper to give, first of all, an account of former editions.

§ 2. I. The *first* edition, and the most important, is that of 1553. The title-page contains solely the words "Pierce the Ploughmans Crede" within a square space in the midst of a wood-cut illustrating the story of Pyramus and Thisbe; the picture being by no means unsuitable for Chaucer's version of the poem. The wood-cut is clearly of continental workmanship, and a copy of the lower part of it, not very well executed, may be seen at p. 96 of "A book of Roxburghe Ballads," edited by J. P. Collier; 1847. The colophon, on a separate leaf, is—IMPRINTED AT LONDON BY REYNOLD WOLFE, ANNO DOMINI M.D.LIII. It was no doubt issued owing to the success of "The Vision of Piers Ploughman," which had been printed by Robert Crowley, in 1550; and considering the tone of the poem, we may safely conclude that it was issued in the early part of the year 1553, while Edward VI. was still alive; for he died on the 6th of July in that year. The reign of Mary was not favourable to its existence, and copies are now very scarce.<sup>1</sup> I have made use of a copy preserved in the Cambridge University Library, and readings

<sup>1</sup> See account of the *third* edition.

from this are denoted in the foot-notes by the letter C. It consists of only 16 leaves, 4to.

II. Elizabeth having succeeded Mary, the poem was again in request. The title-page of the *second* edition has on it merely the words "Pierce the Ploughmans Crede," and no more, the wood-cut having disappeared. It was printed at the same time as "The vision of Pierce Plowman," and often bound up with it; and we learn from the title-page of the longer poem that it was "Imprynted at London, by Owen Rogers, dwellyng neare vnto great Saint Bartelmewes Gate, at the sygne of the spred Egle. ¶ The yere of our Lorde God, a thousand, fyue hundred, threscore and one. The .xxi. daye of the Moneth of Februarye."<sup>1</sup> This edition of 1561 is simply a reprint of that of 1553, and clearly not copied from the MS. It preserves the misprints of the first edition, and adds more to the number; and is therefore considerably inferior to it.

III. In 1814, Dr Whitaker reprinted the first edition of 1553. His object was clearly to produce an *exact* copy of it, and he accordingly used black-letter type and such various marks of contraction as appeared in the old book. It may be considered as a great success, as it accurately reproduces every peculiarity, every misprint, and every stop and mark; so that any one who wishes to have a good copy of the first edition may safely buy this instead, at a far lower price.<sup>2</sup> I have carefully collated these two, and here give the few corrections which any one who buys Whitaker's edition should make.

In the address "to the Reader," last line, the *J* should be an *I*.

Fol. C ij, l. 5 from bottom, the words "more money" are, in the oldest edition, run together into one.

Fol. D iij, l. 15; for "swich" read "swhich."

Fol. D iij, *back*, l. 7; for "swich" read "swhich."

Id. l. 21; for "And" read "Any."

<sup>1</sup> The "Crede" has also a colophon, agreeing with this, but which does not give the date.

<sup>2</sup> The title-page bears—"Pierce the Ploughman's Crede. London. Reprinted by T. Bensley, Bolt Court, Fleet Street, for Lackington, Allen and Co., Finsbury Square; and Robert Triphook, St James's Street. 1814.

Fol. D iij, l. 10 ; for "laiche" read "latche;" though the *t* in the old edition is very indistinct.

Fol. E j, l. 13 ; for "feid" read "feid."

Fol. E ij, *back*, l. 3 from bottom ; for "Abbots" read "Abbottes."

Fol. E iij, l. 13, read "hōly;" in Whitaker's edition the stroke is shifted, and appears above the *l*.

These corrections made, the sole points of difference are, (1.) that the folios do not correspond ; (2.) that the words printed in the *margin* of the old edition are printed by Dr Whitaker in large red letters, to receive which he has made breaks in the continuous text ; and (3.) that Dr Whitaker employs *red* letters for the proper names. I should add, that all three editions have a short glossary at the end, made apparently by Reynold Wolfe, for which see p. xix.

IV. Mr Wright, in 1842, reprinted the "Crede" at the end of his excellent and handy edition of the "Vision," the publisher being William Pickering ; of which a second and revised edition appeared in 1856, published by J. R. Smith, at a very moderate price. Mr Wright corrected most of the more obvious mistakes, so that his edition is very good and useful, and has been of very great service to me, and I here express the obligations to him which I thus lie under. It is therefore with no wish to detract from it, but only for the reader's information, that I here state that I have observed several misprints in it which are mere printer's errors, but where the edition of 1553 is quite correct. Thus at p. 456, l. 182, "Slaughte *in* her ende" should be "Slaughte *is* her ende;" ten lines lower, "Put" should be "But;" and fourteen lines lower still, "Minorities" should be "Minorites." I am of course speaking of his revised edition, and I am induced to believe that the revision of the "Crede" may have been somewhat hurried, as I have observed no such traces of haste in the "Vision."

§ 3. Besides the help thus afforded, we are much indebted to Mr Wright for the following sentence in his Introduction. He says, "I know only of two MSS. of the Creed of Piers Ploughman, one in the British Museum (MS. Reg. 18 B. xvii.), the other in the Library of Trinity College, Cambridge, both on paper, and written long after the date of the printed editions, from which they appear to have been

copied." But for this notice, I might have overlooked the Trinity MS., as only the British Museum one is mentioned in Warton. After reading the above, I thought I could not do better than investigate these MSS. closely; they might perhaps give *some* assistance. The result was surprising, certainly. First of all, it should be noted that Warton speaks of the British Museum MS. as "*not much older than the printed copy,*" and this is certainly the more correct opinion; the British Museum authorities whom Mr Furnivall consulted, declared it to belong certainly to the reign of Henry VIII.; and that it was *not* copied from the printed edition became more and more obvious the more I read of it; it soon appeared to be *much more correct*,<sup>1</sup> and I was myself quite satisfied that it was an independent and valuable text. At the same time, it occurred to me that a very obvious proof of its independence would appear in its containing anywhere additional lines; and, after hoping to find some for a long time in vain, at last *five new lines* appeared, very near the end. These extra lines are of such importance that I have fully discussed them farther on.<sup>2</sup>

§ 4. But an examination of the Trinity MS. surprised me more still. The handwriting is late enough, certainly; possibly after A.D. 1600. But a curious circumstance at once arrests attention, and that is, the continual use of the Saxon letters *ȝ* and *þ*, where the B. M. MS. and the printed editions have *gh* and *th*. It is clear that no man copying from a printed book would systematically make these alterations from one end of the poem to the other, and it is not very likely, even if he did, that he would never make a mistake over it. It is, in fact, obvious, that the Trinity MS. was copied from a much older MS. which is now lost, and this appears farther from noticing the nature of the few blunders that occur in it. Thus, in the first page, the copyist, not quite seeing the difference between a *y* and a *þ*, miswrites one for the other; but he soon *gets over this*, and afterwards *does it right*. Again, seeing the word "wiffen" before him, he copied it "willen," a mistake easily made in copying from

<sup>1</sup> I mean, as regards *readings*. But the scribe of this MS. took no pains to preserve the true *spelling*; he has altered it throughout at pleasure, always for the worse. Many erasures and alterations occur in it, also always for the worse.

<sup>2</sup> See p. xvii.



*manuscript.* Very many more proofs might be adduced, but it will probably be quite sufficient to add, further, that the *five extra lines* spoken of above *appear in this MS. also.*

§ 5. The results of the investigation, which seem to me beyond all controversy, are these :

- (1.) The British Museum MS. is older than the printed copy, and not copied from it.
- (2.) The Trinity MS. is later than the printed copy, but is not copied from it.
- (3.) Both MSS., and also the early printed text, are *all* copied from *one and the same* MS., a very good one, possibly even of the very last years of the fourteenth century, and which is now either lost or not forthcoming. The extreme similarity of these three texts cannot be otherwise accounted for.<sup>1</sup>

Besides which, it is farther evident that the Trinity MS. is the best copy of the three,<sup>2</sup> and I have therefore used it for the text throughout, copying it literally and exactly, marking the expansions of contractions by italics. The only alterations made in it are, the use of capital letters to denote proper names where the MS. has often small letters, and some corrections which have been furnished by collation, which are all noticed in the foot-notes, and which, in every case where the correction is at all important, are pointed out by the use of square brackets. In the foot-notes, this MS. is denoted by the letter A.

The British Museum MS. is the second best copy, and is denoted

<sup>1</sup> I think I may be allowed to judge of this, from having examined, more or less, some thirty MSS. of the "Vision of Piers Ploughman." Even when such MSS. agree very closely indeed in *all other* respects, they scarcely ever contain the *same number of lines.* It is a peculiar defect of MSS. in alliterative verse that lines are frequently omitted. Yet these two MSS. and the early printed text run line for line and word for word throughout; except in the one instance of the five extra lines, which can be well accounted for.

<sup>2</sup> The best copy, in the present case, is to be judged of, not by the date, but by traces of the care taken by the copyist. It is clear that the writer of the Trinity copy was a scrupulous and painstaking antiquary, who carefully put down what he saw before him. It is written on some extra leaves at the end of a copy of Chaucer. The Chaucer had some leaves lost at the beginning, but the missing portion has been carefully supplied *by the same hand* that copied the "Crede." The press-mark of the volume is R. 3. 15.

by the letter B in the foot-notes, the letter C (as already stated) meaning the edition of 1553. Attention is drawn to those readings of C which are *most corrupt* by marking them, in the foot-notes, with an asterisk. *The number of these is about FORTY.*

§ 6. By collation of these three, we are placed in almost as good a position as if we had the original old MS. before our eyes. I have little doubt but that the reader will be well-pleased to find that he is in possession of a sound and trustworthy text, much superior to that of 1553, because it is free from the modifications of spelling which the old printer often made, and because the misprints of that edition have been quite eliminated, and the true sense restored in several formerly doubtful passages. Indeed, the only points now open to doubt are very few; I somewhat mistrust the word *euelles* at l. 242; the word *wlon* at l. 736; and I suspect that, as is usual in alliterative poems, some lines were omitted even in the original; for the transition from ll. 69, 648 to the lines following them is rather too abrupt. I subjoin specimens of Texts B and C.

B. SPECIMEN OF THE BRITISH MUSEUM MS. (BIBL. REG. 18 B. XVII.)

Crose and curtys crist thys begynnyng spede,  
 For the Fathers Frenshype that Formyd hevin,  
 And through the speciall sprite that sprang of hem twayne,  
 And all in one godhed endles dwellyth.  
 A, and all myn A. b. c. after haue I lernyd,  
 And partes in my pater noster ich poynt after other,  
 And after all, myne Ave mare, Almost to the ende, &c.

C. SPECIMEN OF THE OLD EDITION OF 1553.

Cros & curteis Christ this begynnyng spede,  
 For the faders frendshipe, y<sup>t</sup> fourmed beauen,  
 & through y<sup>e</sup> special spirit y<sup>t</sup> sprög of hē tweyne  
 And al in one godhed endles dwelleth :  
 A, and all myn A, b, c, after haue I lerned,  
 And patres ī my pater noster, iche poynt after other,  
 And after al, myne Aue marie, almost to the end, &c.

§ 7. I have printed the text in long lines, because all the copies

are so written and printed, except only Mr Wright's edition. Mr Wright argues for the printing in short lines, in his Introduction, p. xxxii., because of the construction of the Anglo-Saxon verse, &c., and says that "a modern editor is wrong in printing the verses of Piers Plowman *in long lines, as they stand in the manuscripts*, unless he profess to give them as a fac-simile of the manuscripts themselves, or he plead the same excuse of convenience from the shape of his book." The italics are my own; and I will here only say that I do profess to give a fac-simile of the MS., and that I do plead also the excuse of convenience. He also observes that, "in either case, he must carefully preserve the dots of separation in the middle of the lines, which are more inconvenient than the length of the lines, because they interfere with the punctuation of the modern editor." This then I have done, though I have not found it inconvenient. On the contrary, I think it a great convenience. The dot denotes a pause in the rhythm, which very often indeed is coincident with a pause in the sense or with a comma, and thus indicates a certain indefiniteness in the pause, for which it is convenient to have a mark; and it is such a one as we are all accustomed to in the colon used in the Prayer-Book version of the Psalms. A semi-colon in the middle of a line is very rare; if it be required to denote one, we have only to print ; · and it is done. I was induced to use the inverted full stop for this purpose, because it is very easy to print in any sized type, and because the use of a colon produced too heavy an effect, and did not look well. It is right to add that, in the edition of 1553, which is very badly punctuated,<sup>1</sup> the central rhythmical pause is denoted by a comma in about five lines out of six. In MS. B it is neglected; but in MS. A it is, for the most part, *carefully preserved*, and denoted by a kind of colon. Here, then, the superiority of this MS. is once more indicated.

#### § 8. SOME ACCOUNT OF THE POEM.

The reader may consult with advantage Warton's History of English Poetry (vol. 2, p. 123, ed. 1824), upon this subject. In a copy of the "Crede" in Warton's possession, was a short abstract of

<sup>1</sup> Two or three passages, unmeaning in all former editions, have been made clear in the present one by a slight change in the punctuation.

the poem in the handwriting of Alexander Pope, to whom the book once belonged. As anything written by Pope has an interest of its own, I here quote it.

“An ignorant plain man having learned his Paternoster and Ave-mary, wants to learn his creed. He asks several religious men of the several orders to teach it him. First of a friar Minor, who bids him beware of the Carmelites, and assures him that they can teach him nothing, describing their faults, &c. But that the friars Minors shall save him, whether he learns his creed or not. He goes next to the friars Preachers, whose magnificent monastery he describes: there he meets a fat friar, who declaims against the Augustines. He is shocked at his pride, and goes to the Augustines. They rail at the Minorites. He goes to the Carmes [Carmelites]; they abuse the Dominicans, but promise him salvation, without the creed, for money. He leaves them with indignation, and finds an honest poor PLOWMAN in the field, and tells him how he was disappointed by the four orders. The ploughman answers with a long invective against them.”

To this Warton subjoins an account of the mendicant orders, occupying about eight pages, which should be consulted.

§ 9. Good accounts of the rise and spread of the mendicant orders are abundant. The reader may, for a general view of them, consult with advantage Massingberd's History of the English Reformation, chap. vii.; Southey's Book of the Church, chap. xi.; the very interesting preface to the “*Monumenta Franciscana*,” by the editor, Professor Brewer; the excellent life of S. Francis of Assisi, in Sir James Stephen's “*Lectures on Ecclesiastical Biography*;” Mrs Jameson's “*Legends of the Monastic Orders*;” and almost any Church History. I shall here only touch on such points as have *special* reference to the poem.

§ 10. The degeneracy of the monks began to draw attention at an early period; and, in particular, St Hildegardis, abbess of St Rupert's mount, near Bingen,<sup>1</sup> addressed to them words of solemn warning, in the shape of prophecies which announced that still greater corruptions were to come, and would be punished by shameful disgrace and ruin. Very nearly at the same time, viz. during the reign

<sup>1</sup> See l. 703, and the note to it.

of Henry II., appeared the masterly Latin satires of Walter Map, who was particularly severe upon the Cistercian Benedictines, of whom he saw rather too much.<sup>1</sup> Two of his poems, "The Apocalypse of Bishop Goliath," and "The Confession of Goliath," contain most keen and brilliant satire. They are distinguished by a peculiar subtlety, which has not always been understood. Thus, when Map introduces a drunken priest revealing the depth of his degradation by uttering the oft-quoted stanza,

"Meum est propositum in taberna mori :  
 Vinum sit appositum morientis ori,  
 Ut dicant cum venerint angelorum chori,  
 'Deus sit propitius huic potatori'"—

this has seemed to many a mere jovial toper's song, and nothing more. But such was not the view taken, we may fairly conclude, by the author of the "Crede." He can perceive only two possible causes of the rise of the mendicant orders; either the simple supposition that Satan founded them, or else that they originated, in no slight degree, from the popularity of the "Goliath" poems.<sup>2</sup> He suggests that the subtlety of Map's satire was such that the monastic orders were brought into utter disrepute, and therefore the mendicant orders arose to supersede them. That the influence of the "Goliath" poems was so great as this may well be doubted, especially when we remember that the new orders commenced on the continent, not in England. At the same time, it is equally certain that our author is not far wrong; it is quite clear that the rise of the mendicants was due to an attempt made (and which was at the first outset a successful one) to infuse a new spirit of piety and humility into the church, and to regenerate it by efforts of great self-denial and devotion. The character of St Francis seems to me to be in many respects beyond all praise; an enthusiast he was certainly, but noble, self-sacrificing, and pure in heart and aim in the highest degree. To give but one instance: we read that he had the greatest natural repugnance to the sight of a leper, yet he forced himself to eat out of the same dish

<sup>1</sup> See Professor Morley's *English Writers*; vol. i. p. 584.

<sup>2</sup> See l. 479, and the note to it.

with one whom no one could see without loathing, and afterwards devoted himself especially to an attendance upon the leper hospitals, enjoining his followers to do the same. Such an act was a noble example of mercy and humanity ; and, had his followers really followed his rules, they might have done well for a long time.<sup>1</sup> But St Francis was clear-sighted enough to see how liable all human institutions are to perversion and decay, and this reflection kept him in continual sadness. "Cheerless and unalluring is the image of Francis of Assisi : his figure gaunt and wasted, his countenance furrowed with care, his soul hurried from one excitement to another, incapable of study, incapable of repose, forming attachments but to learn their fragility, conquering difficulties but to prove the vanity of conquest, living but to consolidate his order of Minor Brethren, and yet haunted by continual forebodings of their rapid degeneracy."<sup>2</sup> And this too surely came to pass ; and however bad may have been the state of the monks who forgot their vows of renunciation of the world, it was not long before the state of the friars became far worse. Their greed, their selfishness, their love of magnificent buildings and, very often, of delicate clothing which they concealed under their rough cloaks, their insolence, their pride, their self-righteousness, made them fair objects of satire, which was levelled against them most unsparingly by many, and especially by Wycliffe and his followers. This is nowhere shewn more clearly than in the story quoted by Southey,<sup>3</sup> shewing how the friars waited on Wycliffe once at Oxford when he was supposed to be sick unto death, when he "raised himself on his pillow, and looking at them sternly, replied, I shall not die, but live still further to declare the evil deeds of the friars !" And thoroughly did he fulfil his own prediction.<sup>4</sup> They retaliated on him and his followers, as might be expected ; and were particularly active in trying to secure the condemnation of Walter Brute,<sup>5</sup> when he was examined by the Bishop of Hereford, on a charge of heresy.

§ 11. The mention of the last circumstance helps us to fix the

<sup>1</sup> See ll. 511, 514.      <sup>2</sup> Sir J. Stephen : *Ecclesiastical Biography* ; p. 95, 4th ed.

<sup>3</sup> Southey : *Book of the Church*, p. 193 ; ed. 1848.

<sup>4</sup> See ll. 528—530.

<sup>5</sup> See l. 657.

date of the poem ; it is spoken of in the past tense,

“Byhold opon Wat Brut + whou bisiliche þei *pursueden*,”

and the writer seems to hint that they did not very greatly succeed, and were obliged to content themselves with preaching against him, and calling him a heretic. Walter Brute was examined more than once, and he was on his trial from time to time, from A.D. 1391 to 1393. On Monday, October 6, of the latter year, he submitted himself to the bishop of Hereford, contriving rather to allow that his opinions might be overruled by the church than offering to recant them explicitly, so that he was less severely treated than his opponents had hoped and expected. At the same time, this circumstance, though past, was no doubt still very fresh in the minds of all, for the present tense is used in ll. 659, 660 ; and we also gather that, though the friars wished to see heretics burnt, there had been no instance as yet of any such event. Hence the poem was certainly written after the latter part of 1393, and before 1401. But we may come much closer than this to the date ; for the allusion to flattering *kings* in ll. 364, 365 no doubt refers to Richard II., who was still alive. Indeed, had the poem been written in the year of his death, or just after it, we might fairly expect to find some allusion to it, so that our lower date now becomes February, 1400. Hence internal evidence alone suggests some year in the series 1394—1399 as the year of composition.

§ 12. But this inquiry is closely connected with another, viz., what is known of the author ? We know certainly that he was an avowed Wycliffite, that he was *not* the author of the “Vision of Piers Plowman” (which was partly written in A.D. 1362),<sup>1</sup> but that he imitated the metre of that poem, and, to some extent, the satirical tone of it. Besides this, he clearly took the plan of his poem from the “Vision ;” the way in which he wanders about seeking some one

<sup>1</sup> The vocabulary of these two writers is very different, and their peculiarities of style and phrase are quite unlike, whilst at the same time they are very characteristic. Nor are their views alike on all points. There is nothing to shew that Langland was a follower of Wycliffe, though he may have regarded his teaching with complacency. But we need not infer that Langland was now dead, or that he wrote no more than the “Vision.” A poem on the “Deposition of Richard II.” reproduces *all* his peculiarities, and betrays, as I think, the hand of the master.

to teach him his Creed is copied from the description of the efforts of William the dreamer to find where the abode is of Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best. In fact, it is easy to point to the particular passage in the "Vision" which he was thinking of. The first fifteen lines of the Prologue to the Vita de Do-well give the key-note to the "Crede," and I therefore quote them here by way of illustration.

þus I robed in russet · romed I aboute  
 Al a somer sesoun · for to seche Dowel,  
 And fraynide ful ofte · of folk þat I mette  
 ʒif any wizt wiste · where Dowel was at inne,  
 And what man he miȝte be · of many man I askide.  
 Was neuer wiht as I wente · þat me wisse coupe  
 Wher þis ladde loggede · lasse ne more ;  
 Til hit fel on a Friday · twei Freres I mette,  
 Maistres of þe Menours · men of grete wittes.  
 Ich heilede hem hendeli · as ich hedde i-leorned,  
 And preiede hem, par charite · er þei passede furre,  
 " ʒif þei knewen any cuntre · or coostes aboute  
 Wher þat Dowel dwelleþ · do me to wisse."  
 " Mari," quod þe Menour · " among vs he dwelleþ,  
 And euer haþ, as ich hope · and euer schal her-after."

PIERS PLOWMAN, (ed. Skeat, 1867); *Text A.* ix. 1—15.

We should observe, too, that the two authors take rather different views of "Piers the Ploughman." Langland considers him as the type of a class of industrious and lowly-minded men, who guided their life by the Gospel, and by their influence induced others to admire and practise a pure and simple form of Christianity based upon a true-felt love for their fellows. Langland's Ploughman gives good advice even to the knight and to gentle ladies; and, towards the end of the poem, he introduces *the Piers Ploughman, par excellence*, the good Samaritan above all others, Jesus Christ the righteous. But the Ploughman in the Crede is an individual, a ploughman and no more, described as in an abject state of poverty, yet so gifted with homely common sense as fully to see through all the tricks of the friars, and knowing very little more than is necessary for his soul's health, little more than the Creed and the Gospels. It is perhaps right to remind



the reader that there is a difference even in the very *titles* of the poems. The one is "Piers Ploughman's Crede," i. e. the creed which the ploughman taught; the other is "Visio Willelmi de Petro Ploughman," the "Vision of Piers Ploughman which William saw," and which may be spoken of as the "Vision," or as "Piers Ploughman," but *never* as "Piers Ploughman's Vision," except by such as have no regard for accuracy, and who would not stick at using the term "Christian's Vision" as an equivalent one to Bunyan's vision of one Christian.

§ 13. Any further information about the author of the "Crede" can only be obtained by the discovery of other poems which he may have written. Now there are some poems printed in "Monumenta Franciscana," pp. 591—608, and again printed in Wright's "Political Poems," vol. i. pp. 253—270, which are worth some attention. The first is in Latin, the second two (of which Mr Brewer has made three) in English; they are all by the same author, and clearly written during the reign of Richard II.<sup>1</sup> by one who says that he had been a novice in the order of St Francis, but had left it to become a Wycliffite; also, that he was not an *apostata*, as he had not stayed in the convent his full year, but only about ten months and twenty days. They are outspoken attacks upon the friars, and upon the Minorites in particular, and at first sight seem to have a good deal in common with the "Crede." A careful scrutiny, however, of their language makes the identity of authorship seem doubtful, and, though it seemed to me at first probable, I now give it up; though, at the same time, these poems well deserve to be compared with the "Crede," and I have therefore quoted from them occasionally in the Notes. But there is another poem which stands a close scrutiny better, and deserves yet more attention, and this is no other than the well-known "Plowman's Tale," which has even been attributed to Chaucer, though it most certainly is not his. It may be found among the Canterbury Tales in most old editions subsequent to 1542; and also under the title of the "Complaint of the Ploughman," in Wright's "Political Poems," vol. i. pp. 304—346. Now the writer of this piece distinctly

<sup>1</sup> The one in Latin describes the council held at London in A.D. 1382.

claims to have written the "Crede;" for he says,

"Of freres I have told before  
In a making of a Crede;"

i. e. in a poem named a "Creed." Mr Wright, if I interpret him correctly, seems to think this means no more than that the two poems were written by two men of the same way of thinking. But I am inclined to take it literally, simply in the plain sense which the words naturally bear. After reading this "Complaint of the Ploughman" again and again, I am more and more convinced that its writer states the simple truth. The dialect of the poems is the same; there is the same use of the past participle beginning with *I-* or *Y-*; the vocabulary is very similar; identities of phrase occur in many places; whilst the object of both is precisely the same, viz. to attack the friars, and to defend Wycliffe. The proof would be somewhat tedious from the very great number of similarities which might be adduced; but some of the most striking will be found in the notes. It is quite a noticeable feature in the "Crede" how frequently the words *glose*, *glosinge*, *glosed* occur; and there is precisely the same repetition of them in the "Complaint." In both poems occur such remarkable words as *tote* (to look), *angerliche*, *baselards*, *falshed*, *defended* (forbade), *bigge* (to build), *crochettes* or *crokettes*, *eggeth*, *faitours*, *hernes*, *fain* (to feign), *sewe* (to follow), *queint*, *queintise* (in the peculiar sense of *crafty*, *craft*), *lorell*, *wisse*, *se* (seat), *curates*, *wilne*, *sain* (to say), *seker* or *siker*, *trusse* (to pack), *hongen* (to hang), and many others. The full force of the argument can only be perceived by a reader who compares the poems for himself, and consists even more in the fact that the *force* of the above words in both poems is generally the same, than in the mere occurrence of the words themselves; yet even this is of great weight, considering how short the poems are, and how rare are some of the words. Then again, we find, in both, like peculiar expressions such as, *curteis Christ*, *cuttid clothes*, &c. But the similarities which a reader would probably attach most weight to are such as these which I here tabulate.

Quoted from "The Complaint."  
I painted and portred.

Such that cannot say her Crede.  
They nold nat demen after the  
face.

In cattel catching is her comfort.

Market-beaters, and medling make.

The poor in spirite Crist gan  
blesse.

With double worsted well ydight.  
Masters to be called defended he  
tho.

Had they ben out of religioun,  
They must have hanged at the  
plowe,

Threshing and diking from toun  
to toun.

They must have hanged at the  
plowe.

Quoted from the "Crede."  
.. portreid and paynt (l. 121).  
.. peynt & portred (l. 192).  
y can nohz̄t my Crede (8).  
þei shulden nouzt after þe face ·  
neuer þe folke demen (670).  
And also y sey couetise · catel to  
fongen (146).  
At marketts & miracles · we  
medleþ vs nevere (107).  
And alle pouere in gost · God him-  
self blisseþ (521).  
Of double worstede y-dyzt (228).  
.. ben maysters i-called  
þat þe gentill Iesus . . . purly  
defended (574).

[but for the temptation of worldly  
wealth]

þei schulden deluen & diggen ·  
and dongen þe erþe (785).

I seiz̄ a sely man me by · opon  
þe plow hongen (421).

Several more points of resemblance might be cited, but surely these are sufficient to confirm a statement made by the author himself, and *against* which there cannot be adduced any argument whatever. It may be looked upon, I think, as a proved fact; and I would ask the reader who has any lingering doubts fairly to compare the poems, and he will see how very much—to save space—I have understated and curtailed the proofs of it.

§ 14. There is no exact evidence for the date of the "Complaint," but Mr Wright puts it down at about 1393 or 1394, giving to the "Crede" the date 1392, and to the proceedings against Walter Brute that of 1391. But these proceedings lasted some time, and were not over till 1393, being merely *commenced* in 1391; and on this account

I assign about 1394 as the date of the "Crede," and about 1395 as that of the "Complaint." These dates satisfy every condition, and I do not think will ever need much alteration.

§ 15. The "Crede" has always been a favourite poem. Dr Whitaker quotes the following. "A piece" (says Mr Rawlinson, speaking of the CREDE) "rare and good, in which the remains of Monastic Antiquity are graphically describ'd. It charms me on that account when e'er I read it;" Hearne. MS. *Collections*, Vol. lxxxii. page 75. It has several passages of great interest, as for instance, the celebrated description (one of the best we have) of a Dominican convent. The pillars were painted and polished, and carved with curious knots. The windows were well wrought and lofty. The buildings were well walled-in all round, with postern-doors for easy egress. There were gardens and "erberes" (*herbaria*) with well-clipped borders, a cross curiously carved, and "tabernacles" used for reconnoitring from. Then there was the minster with its arches, and crockets, and knots of gold, its painted windows glorious with coats-of-arms and merchants' marks, its tombs with knights in alabaster, and lovely ladies by their side in gay garments; its cloisters pillared and painted, covered with lead and paved with painted tiles, with conduits of tin and lavers of "latun;" and its chapter-house fairly carved, and with a splendid ceiling. Then there was a refectory like a king's hall, regal kitchens, a dormitory with strong doors, halls, houses, chambers, infirmary, &c.; and then yet more houses with gay garrets, and every window-hole glazed. How excellent, again, are the portraits of the fat friar with his double-chin shaking about, as big as a goose's egg, and the poor ploughman with his hood full of holes and his mittens made of patches, followed by his poor wife going "bare-foot on the bare ice, that the blood followed!" Whilst the cry of the ploughman's children sums up the early history of the poor of England in the words—

"And alle þey songen o songe \* þat sorwe was to heren;  
þey crieden alle o cry \* a *carefull* note."

The real value of the poem lies, in fact, in these and other vivid and exact descriptions, which are alike useful to the antiquary and

interesting to the general reader, as they give a clear insight into the condition of the poor, the animosity which existed between the friars and the secular clergy, and, most striking point of all, the utter contempt in which the orders held each other, and the audacity with which each tried to surpass the rest both in pitiless extortion and in proud display. To sum up all briefly, the poem is one which deserves not only to be read, but to be studied; it is one of those which is much more interesting on a second perusal than on a first, and continually improves upon acquaintance. It is well illustrated by, and well illustrates, Chaucer, and, in particular, the "Sompnoures Tale." It is of much value to lexicographers, who have made considerable use of it; and it is on this account (as well as with a view to make this edition suitable for use in schools), that I have tried to make the Glossarial Index tolerably full and complete.<sup>1</sup>

§ 16. NOTE ON THE FIVE EXTRA LINES NOW FIRST PRINTED. It has been already mentioned that the MSS. are shewn to be independent of the printed edition by the appearance in them of five new lines. It so happens that these lines are certainly genuine, and of some importance. They are ll. 822, 823, and 828, 829, and 830. It is quite easy to see why Reynold Wolfe did not print them; they savoured far too much of the doctrine of transubstantiation to be likely to be acceptable to Protestant readers in the reign of Edward VI.; and he therefore purposely suppressed them. But he did it very clumsily, for he quite overlooked the fact that the omission of them took away the clue to the context and quite robbed it of all meaning, so that the whole of ll. 824—827 and 831—840 seem to be inserted, much to the reader's bewilderment, literally *à-propos* of nothing.<sup>2</sup> But now that these lines are restored, the drift of this whole passage is clear enough, and we perceive that the author is attacking the friars on yet one more point, viz. for the subtlety of their arguments about the sacrament of the mass, and for their attempts to explain a mystery which had much

<sup>1</sup> The word "Chapolory" is quoted in Richardson's Dictionary under the head of *Chapel*, by a strange blunder; and the word "Poynt-til," which is given in many dictionaries, is, I believe, one which never existed except by a misprint; see note to l. 194.

<sup>2</sup> He made yet another clumsy alteration; viz. by substituting "Abbot" for "bychop" in ll. 748 and 756, regardless of alliteration.

better, in his opinion, be left unexplained. His belief is, he says, that "God's body and blood are really in the sacrament; and though proud friars dispute about God's deity like dotards, the more the matter is stirred, the more confused they become. Christ said it *is* so; then what need of more words? No need to study and bestir our wits. These masters of divinity, many of them, do not follow the faith, as many of the common people do. How may any man's unassisted wit understand the mysteries of Christ that surpass all natural phenomena? A man must be of as meek a heart as Christ himself to receive the Holy Ghost by the purity of his life; and if a man is thus meek, he needs not to study the matter, nor to be called a Master (which Christ forbade), nor to put a cap on his bald pate; all he need do is to preach and live a pure life, and to use no pride." Such is the true sense of the whole passage, and it is quite consistent and intelligible. It appears further that, with some notion of hiding the omission, five lines, ll. 817—821, were inserted in the same edition; these I believe to be spurious, and of no older date than 1553. The imitation of style and spelling is very ingenious, but the alliteration in them is not so good. For further information, see note to l. 817, &c.

§ 17. GLOSSARY, &c. TO THE FIRST PRINTED EDITION. The edition of 1553 has some lines "to the reader" prefixed to it, and a Glossary at the end.<sup>1</sup> These are of little importance, but are printed here for completeness' sake. On the back of the title-page we find, in italics—

*"To the Reader.*

*To read strange newes, desires manye,  
Which at my hande they can not haue;  
For here is but antiquitie  
Expressed only, as tholde booke gaue.  
Take in good part, and not depraue  
The Ploughmans Crede, ientyll reader:  
Loo, this is all that I requyer."*

On the last leaf we find, in black letter—"For to occupie this leaffe which els shuld haue ben vacant, I haue made an interpretation of certayne hard wordes vsed in this booke for the better vnderstandyng of it.

<sup>1</sup> Also a few side-notes, printed in this volume in *capital letters*.

Frayning, forsakyng	Ey, egge
Wunede, <sup>1</sup> wont	Lellich, truely
Graith, truth	Egged, moued
Erde, erth	Theigh, though
Leue, beleue	Loresmen, learned men
God, <sup>2</sup> good	Stightle, stay
Byiapeth, deceiue	Cherlich, gladly
Glaueryng, flattering	Louted, bowed
Puple, people	Preing, <sup>8</sup> praisyng
Cholede, <sup>3</sup> suffered	Fonden, walk
Glees, playes	Halt, kept
Hobelen, skipping	Hetes, <sup>9</sup> commaundements
Monelich, <sup>4</sup> monyless	Sigge, say
Pulched, polished	Ho, she
Mightestou, mihgtest <sup>5</sup> thou	Rotheren, oxon
Semed, <sup>6</sup> gased	Dreccheth, drouneth
yerne, ofte	Lacchen, catchen
Queintly, strangely	Lakke, blame
Pure, very	Yerd, <sup>10</sup> rodde
Munte, went	Mystremen, nedy men
Bellich, well	Terre poughe, tar box
Tild, set	Pris liif, cheif or young
Hyrnes, <sup>7</sup> caues	Forgabbed, belyed
Feele, many	Waynen, <sup>11</sup> banysh

The residue the diligent reader shall (I trust) well ynough perceiue."

<sup>1</sup> Refers to l. 32, where the old printed *text* has *wunede*.

<sup>2</sup> Refers to l. 42, where Dr Whitaker thinks it means *God*, and I incline to think so too.

<sup>3</sup> *Sic*; an error for *Tholed*, l. 90.

<sup>4</sup> An error for *Menelich*, l. 108.

<sup>5</sup> *Sic*.

<sup>6</sup> An error for *zemed*, l. 159.

<sup>7</sup> See note to l. 182.

<sup>8</sup> The old *text* has *preying*, i. e. praying, l. 336.

<sup>9</sup> For *Hestes*; cf. l. 345 with l. 26.

<sup>10</sup> Only occurs in *Lym-zerde*, l. 564.

<sup>11</sup> *Sic*; an error for *Waynen*. It should be noted that many of these explanations are quite wrong; see the Glossarial Index.

## ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

P. iii, l. 2 *from bottom*. The British Museum MS. is on vellum.

P. 35, note to l. 65. The Pied Friars had but one house, viz. at Norwich. The order was dissolved, and they had to join one of the principal orders; we may infer that they joined the Carmelites.

P. 54, l. 782. Cf.

“But, Jak, thouz thi questions semen to thee wyse,  
zet liztly a lewid man maye *leyen hem a water*;”

Reply of Frier Dawe Topias; *Pol. Poems*, ii. 43.

P. 73. The poem, with the burden “London,” &c., is printed in *Reliq. Antiq.* i. 205. In l. 30 of God spede the Plough, “a styk of a bough” means a tally; see note to *Piers Plowman*, iv. 48.

L. 428. Mr Furnivall has kindly sent me the following quotation, which helps to shew that the meaning of *mete* is scanty or insufficient, in the present passage.

“‘He cloth my-selfe in strange array,  
in a beggars habbitt I will goe.’ . . .

John, hee gott on a *clouted* cloake,  
soe *mete* & low then by his knee,” &c.

*William Stewart and John*; Bp. Percy’s Folio MS., p. 432.

L. 627. With regard to ll. 627-629, a reply to my query in “Notes and Queries” has appeared, written by Mr G. A. Sala. See N. & Q., 3rd S. xii. 211.

## GLOSSARY.

Cloutede, patched; perhaps without reference to the *cleat*; see Gloss. to *Will. of Palerne*.

Hokschynes, gaiters, 426. Compare the Ayrshire *hoeshins* or *hushions*, Ross. *hoggers*; another form of *hoskins*, the dimin. of *hose*. The *hoeshins* are of various sorts; some are made of old stockings with the feet cut off. For the change of *hs* and *sk*, cf. *axe* with *ask*.

“*Mete*” means scanty, insufficient; see the note to l. 428, and compare the following quotation, sent me by Mr Wedgwood—

“There’s no room at my side, Margaret,  
My coffin’s made so *met*.”

Add—*Starep*, sparkle, shine, 553. *Wayten*, look out, watch, 469.



## Peres the Ploughmans Crede.

**C**ROS, AND Curteis Crist · þis begynnyng spede,  
 For þe faderes frendchipe · þat fourmede Heuene,  
 And þoruþ þe special spirit · þat sprong of hem tweyne,  
 And alle in on godhed · endles dwelleþ! 4  
 A and all myn A.b.c · after haue y lerned,  
 And [patred] in my *pater-noster* · iche poynt after oþer,  
 And after all, myn *Aue-marie* · almost to þe ende; 7  
 But all my kare is to comen · for y can noþt my Crede.  
 Whan y schal schewen myn schrift · schent mote y  
 worþen,  
 þe prest wil me punyche · & penaunce enioyne;  
 þe Lengþe of a Lenten · flech moot y leue  
 After þat Estur ys ycomen · and þat is hard fare; 12  
 And Wedenes-day iche wyke · wiþ-uten flech-mete.  
 And also Jesu hym-self · to the Jewes he seyde,  
 “He þat leueþ nougt on me · he leseþ þe blisse.”  
 þerfor lerne þe byleue · leuest me were, 16  
 And if any werldly wigt · wille me couþe,  
 Oþer lewed or lered · þat lyueþ þerafter,  
 And fullliche folweth þe feyþ · and feyneþ non oþer;  
 þat no worldliche wele · wilneþ no tyme, 20  
 But lyueþ in louyng of God · and his lawe holdeþ,  
 And for no getyng of good · neuer his God greueþ,

Christ and His  
cross speed this  
beginning!

I know my Pater-  
noster and my  
Ave, but I know  
not yet my Crede.

I shall have to  
fast 40 days after  
Easter is come.

16 Therefore must I  
learn my Creed,  
if any true man  
will teach me.

3. *spirit*] sprite B.

6. [patred] patres AC; partes B;  
see note, and footnote to l. 451.

8. For y, A has þ by mistake, here  
and in l. 9; BC have I.

17. And if] Yf B; Gif C.

19. feyþ] feyz A; Faithe B; feith  
C; cf. l. 95.

20. wilneþ—tyme] willeth at no  
tyme (over an erasure) B.

- But follow[e]þ him þe full wey \* as he þe folke taughte.  
 I question many men, but they cannot tell me. But to many maner of men \* þis inatter is asked, 24  
 Boþe to lered and to lewed \* þat seyn þat þey leueden  
 Hollich on þe grete god \* and holden alle his hestes ;  
 But by a fraynyng for-þan \* faileþ þer manye. 27
- First I asked the Friars, who said the lock of belieþ lay locked in their hands. For first y fraynede þe freres \* and þey me fulle tolden,  
 þat all þe frute of þe fayþ \* was in here foure ordres,  
 And þe cofres of cristendam \* & þe keye boþen,  
 And þe lok [of beleve \* lyeth] loken in her hondes.  
 þanne [wende] y to wyten \* & wiþ a whiþt y mette, 32
- MINORITES, OR GRAYE FRERES. I asked a Minorite first, A Menoure in a morow-tide \* & to þis man I saide,  
 “ Sire, for grete god[e]s loue \* þe graiþ þou me telle,  
 Of what myddelerde man \* myzte y best lerne  
 My Crede ? For I can it nougt \* my kare is þe more ; 36  
 & þerfore, for Cristes loue ! \* þi counsell y praie.
- telling him that I thought a Carmelite could teach me. A Carm me haþ y-couenaunt \* þe Crede me to teche ;  
 But for þou knowest Carmes well \* þi counsaile y aske.”
- þis Menour loked on me \* and lawzyng he seyde, 40  
 “ Leue Cristen man \* y leue þat þou madde !  
 Whouþ schulde þei techen þe God \* þat con not hemselue ?  
 þei ben but jugulers \* and iapers, of kynde,  
 Lorels and Lechures \* & lemmans holden ; 44  
 Neyþer in order ne out \* but vn-neþe lybbeþ,  
 And byiapeþ þe folke \* wiþ gestes of Rome !  
 It is but a faynt folk \* i-founded vp-on iapes,
23. followeþ] followþ A ; Followith B ; folweth C.  
 25. þey] A has þeþ by mistake, here and in l. 28 ; BC have they. leueden] leveden B ; liueden C.  
 26. hestes] hesteg (sic) A ; hestys B ; hestes C.  
 27. fraynyng] fraþnyng A ; fraynyng BC.  
 28. freres] Friers B. þey me fulle] them full B (where the m is over an erasure).  
 30. boþen] heþen A ; bethen (?) B ; bothen C.  
 31. [of—lyeth] From B ; of byleue lieth C ; an lene his A (corruptly).  
 32. [wende] wend B ; wennede C ; wittede A. ryten] wytten C.  
 33. Menoure] Minoure C.  
 34. godes] gods A ; godes BC. graiþ] graith C ; truth (overgraith erased) B.  
 38. Crede] So in AB ; C has nede.\*  
 40. Menour] mynour B ; Minour C.  
 41. þat—madde] that thou maid B ; that thou madde C ; see l. 280.  
 42. schulde] miswritten schude in A.  
 43. jugulers] yugulers A ; iugulers C.  
 46. gestes] iestes B.

- þei makeþ hem Maries men · (so þei men tellen), 48  
 And lieþ on our Ladie · many a longe tale. who lie about our  
Lady, and betray  
women.  
 And þat wicked folke · wymmen bi-traieþ,  
 And bigileþ hem of her good · wiþ glauerynge wordes,  
 And þerwiþ holden her hous · in harlotes werkes. 52  
 And, so saue me God! · I hold it gret synne It is a great sin to  
give them any-  
thing.  
 To 3yuen hem any good · swiche glotones to fynde,  
 To maynteyne swiche<sup>1</sup> maner men · þat mychel good [1 MS. "swiche."]  
 destruyep.  
 3et seyn they in here sutilte · to sottes in townes, 56  
 þei comen out of Carmeli · Crist for to followen,  
 & feyneþ hem with holynes · þat yuele hem bisemeþ.  
 þei lyuen more in lecherie · and lieth in her tales They live more in  
lechery than in  
good life; which  
they would not  
do, if they knew  
their Creed.  
 þan suen any god liife; · but [lurken] in her selles, 60  
 [And] wynnen werldliche god · & wasten it in synne.  
 And 3if þei couþen her crede · oþer on Crist leueden,  
 þei weren nouzt so hardie · swich harlotri vsen.  
 Sikerli y can nouzt fynden · who hem first founded, 64 No one founded  
these Pious Friars;  
they founded  
themselves.  
 But þe folles foundeden hem-self · freres of the Pye,  
 And maken hem mendynauns · & marre þe puple.  
 But what glut of þo gomes · may any good kachen,  
 He will kepen it hym-self · & cofren it faste, 68 Every glutton  
among them  
keeps all to him-  
self.  
 And þei3 his felawes fayle good · for him he may  
 steruen.  
 Her money may bi-quest · & testament maken,  
 And no obedience bere · but don as [hem] luste.  
 [And] ryzt as Robertes men · raken aboute, 72 People may leave  
them money, and  
then do as they  
like.  
 At feires & at ful ales · & fyllen þe cuppe,  
 And precheþ all of pardon · to plesen the puple. They loaf about  
at fairs.

48. *so*] and so BC.  
 49. *lieþ*] *leyth* B; *leieth* C.  
 53. *gret*] *great* B; *greate* C.  
 57. *followen*] *folwen* C.  
 59. *lyuen*] *leyvin* B. *tales*] *tallys*  
 B.  
 60. *suen*] *schewin* B. [*lurken*] C]  
 lyrken A; *lurkyn* B.  
 61. [*And*] But ABC. *werldliche*]

*werdliche* C.  
 62. *3if*] *Yef* B; *ghif* C.  
 65. *foundeden*] *Foundon* B.  
 68. *hymself*] *hem self* C.  
 69. *þei3*] *though* B; *thoigh* C.  
 71. *no*] *none* BC. [*hem*] *hym* ABC  
 (*wrongly*). *luste*] *list* B.  
 72. [*And*] *so in* BC; A *has tryzt* =  
 & *ryzt*; see l. 215.

- Her pacience is all passed · & put out to ferme,  
*And* pride is in her pouerte · þat litell is to preisen. 76  
*And* at þe hulling of oure Ladye · þe wymmen to lyken,  
 They are great at  
 Miracle-plays.  
 And miracles of mydwyves · & maken wymmen to wenen  
 þat þe lace of oure ladie smok · lizteþ hem of children.  
 þei ne prechen nouzt of Powel · ne penaunce for synne,  
 But all of mercy & mensk · þat Marie maie helpen. 81
- They follow after  
 women, whom  
 they call their  
 sisters.  
 Wiþ sterne staues and stronge · þey ouer lond strakeþ  
 þider as her lemmans liggeþ · and lurkeþ in townes,  
 (Grey grete-hedede quenes · wiþ gold by þe eizen), 84  
 And seyn, þat here sustren þei ben · þat soioureneþ  
 aboute ;  
 And þus about þey gon · & godes folke by-traieþ.
- St Paul preached  
 about such as  
 these ; Phil. iii.  
 18, 19.  
 It is þe puple þat Powel · preched of in his tyme ;  
 He seyde of swich folk · þat so aboute wente, 88  
 ‘ Wepying, y warne 3ow · of walkers aboute ;  
 It þeþ enemyes of þe cros · þat crist opon þolede.  
 Swiche slomerers in slepe · slaube is her ende,  
*And* glotony is her God · wiþ g[l]opping of drynk, 92  
 And gladnes in gleees · & gret ioye y-maked ;  
 In þe schending of swiche · schall mychel folk lawze.’  
 þerfore, frend, for þi feyþ · fond to don betere,  
 Leue nouzt on þo losels · but let hem forþ pasen, 96  
 For þei ben fals in her feiþ · & fele mo opere.”
- So don't believe  
 them, my friend,  
 but let them go !”  
 “ Alas ! frere,” quap I þo · “ my purpos is i-failed,  
 Now is my counfort a-cast ! · canstou no bote,  
 Where y myzte meten wiþ a man · þat myzte me  
 [wissen] 100  
 For to conne my Crede · Crist for to folwen ?”
- “ But can you not  
 tell me of any one  
 who can teach me  
 my Creed ?”

80. *Powel*] Pawle B.  
 81. *merci—mensk*] mary and melk  
 (!) B.  
 84. *eizen*] eighen C.  
 85. *sustren*] sustern C.  
 87. *Powel C*] Powell A ; Powle B.  
 89. *3ow*] you BC.  
 90. *opon*] vpon BC. *þolede*]  
 tho lede C.

91. *slomerers*] slomrers C. *slaube*]  
 slauth B ; slaughte C. *her*] ther B.  
 92. *gloppyng*] gopping A ; golping  
 B ; gloppyng C.  
 94. *mychel folk*] many B.  
 95. *fond*] Found B.  
 99. *counfort*] comfort BC.  
 100. [*wissen*] wyssen C ; willen A  
 (*by mistake for wisten*) ; whiffen B.

“**C**ERTEYNE, felawe,” quap þe frere · “wip-uten any MINORITES.  
faile. “Certainly, yes.

Of all men opon mold · we Menures most scheweþ We Minorites lead  
the most holy life.  
þe pure Apostell[e]s life · wip penance on erþe, 104  
And suen hem in saunctite · & suffren well harde.  
We haunten none tauernes · ne hobelen abouten ; We haunt no  
taverns, or  
markets, or plays.  
At marketts & myraclēs · we medleþ vs nevere ;  
We hondlen no money · but menelich faren, 108  
And haven hunger at [the] meate · at ich a mel ones.  
We hauen forsaken the worlde · & in wo lybbeþ,  
In penaunce & pouerte · & precheþ þe puple, We live in  
poverty, and pray  
for all our lay  
brethren who give  
us anything.  
By ensample of oure life · soules to helpen ; 112  
And in pouertie praien · for all oure parteners  
þat ȝyueþ vs any good · god to honouren,  
Oþer bell oþer booke · or breed to our fode,  
Oþer catell oþer cloþ · to coveren wip our bones, 116  
Money or money-worthe ; · here mede is in heven.  
For we buldeþ a burwȝ · a brod and a large,  
A Chirche and A Chapaile · with chambers a-lofte, For we build a  
large conuent,  
with windows and  
high walls.  
Wip wide windowes y-wrouȝt · & walles well heye, 120  
þat mote bene portreid and paynt · & pulched ful clene,  
Wip gaie glittering glas · glowing as þe sonne.  
And myȝtestou amenden vs · wip money of þyn owne, Only give us  
something, and  
you shall be  
painted in our  
west window,  
kneeling before  
Christ.  
þou chuldest enely bifore Crist · in compas of gold 124  
In þe wide windowe westwarde · wel niȝe in the myddell,  
And seynt Fraunces him-self · schall folden the in his  
cope,  
And presente the to the trynitie · and praie for thy  
synnes ;

103. *opon*] vpon C. *Menures*] meniers B ; Minorites C.  
104. *Apostelles*] Apostells A ; aposteles C ; apostylles B.  
106. *none*] no C.  
107. *medeleþ*] medeley \*C.  
108. *menelich*] monelich \*C.  
109. [the BC] þer A (*wrongly*).  
110. *lybboth*] *resembles* lyvveth in A.

117. *or*] other BC.  
119. *Chapaile*] chapitre B (*over an erasure*); chapitle C.  
121. *paynt*] payntyd B ; paint C.  
123. *owne*] owen C.  
124. *chuldest enely*] chouldest knely C ; shouldest knely B.  
125. *windowe*] wyndowes B ; wind-ow C.

- Your name shall be read there for ever.    þi name schall noblich ben wryten · & wrouzt for the nones, 128  
 And, in remembrance of þe · y-rade þer for euer.  
 And, broþer, be þou nouzt aferd ; · [bythenk in] thyn herte,
- Never mind your Creed; I can easily assoil you."    þouȝ þou conne nouzt þi Crede · kare þou no more. 132  
 I schal assoilen þe, syre · & setten it on my soule,  
 And þou maie maken þis good · þenk þou non oþer."  
 "SIRE," y saide, "in certaine · y schal gon & asaye;"—  
 I promised to try and find him something; he assoiled me, and I left him.    And he sette on me his honde · & assoilede me clene,  
 And þeir y parted him fro · wiþ-outen any peine, 136  
 In couenant þat y come aȝen · Crist he me be-tauzte.  
 þanne saide y to my-self · "here semep litel trewþe !
- Then I thought of Christ's words (Mat. vii. 1-4);    First to blamen his broþer · and bacbyten him foule,  
 þeire-as curteis Crist · clereliche saide, 140  
 'Whow myzt-tou in thine broþer eize · a bare mote loken,  
 And in þyn owen eize · nouzt a bem toten ?  
 See fyrst on þi-self · and siþen on anoþer,  
 And clense clene þi syzt · and kepe well þyn eize, 144  
 And for anoþer mannes eize · ordeyne after.'  
 and how he blamed covetousness (Luke xii. 15);    And also y sey coueitise · catel to fongen,  
 þat Crist haþ clerliche forboden · & clenliche destruede,  
 And saide to his sueres · forsoþe on þis wise, 148  
 'Nouzt þi neiȝbours good · couet yn no tyme.'  
 But charite & chastete · ben chased out clene,
- and that men are known by their fruits (Mat. vii. 20).    But Crist seide, 'by her fruyt · men shall hem ful knowen.' 151  
 þanne saide y, "certeyn, sire · þou demest full trewe !"

128. *noblich*] *So in BC; A really has nobliþ, a mistake caused by reading noblich as noblith.*

130. [*bythenk in*] *So in C; A corruptly has by þenken.*

134. *gon*] *So in BC; A has gone.*

137. *betauzte*] *A really has betaiȝte (with the i undotted) by mere mistake;*

*betaught BC.*

141. *myzt-tou*] *myght thou BC. thine*] *thy C. broþer*] *brothers C.*

146. *sey*] *saye B; see C.*

147. *destruede*] *distrayid B; destruedē C.*

149. *couet yn*] *couetyn A; coveit not at B; coueyte in C.*

**H**ANNE þouzt y to frayne þe first \* of þis foure ordins, I determined  
 And presede to þe prechoures \* to proven here wille. to try the  
 Dominicans.  
 [Ich] hizede to her house \* to herken of more ;  
 And whan y cam to þat court \* y gaped aboute. 156  
 Swich a bild bold, y-buld \* opon erþe heizte I had never seen  
 Say i nouzt in certeine \* sippe a longe tyme. such a building as  
 their convent.  
 Y zemedede vpon þat house \* & zerne þeron loked, 159  
 Whouz þe pileres weren y-peynt \* and pulched ful clene, It had painted and  
 polished pillars,  
 And queynteli i-corven \* wiþ curiouse knottes,  
 Wiþ wyndowes well y-wrouzt \* wide vp o-lofte. wide windows,  
 And þanne y entrid in \* and even-forþ went,  
 And all was walled þat wone \* þouz it wid were, 164  
 Wiþ posternes in pryuytie \* to pasen when hem liste ; privy posterns,  
 Orchezardes and erberes \* euesed well clene, orchards, and  
 gardens.  
 And a curious cros \* craftly entayled,  
 Wiþ tabernacles y-tizt \* to toten all abouten. 168  
 þe pris of a plouz-lond \* of penyes so rounde  
 To aparaile þat pyler \* were pure lytel.  
 þanne y munte me forþ \* þe mynstre to knowen, The minster was  
 well built,  
 And a-waytede a woon \* wonderlie well y-beld, 172  
 Wiþ arches on eueriche half \* & belliche y-corven,  
 Wiþ crochetes on corners \* wiþ knottes of golde, with crockets and  
 knots of gold,  
 Wyde wyndowes y-wrouzt \* y-written full pikke,  
 Schynen wiþ schapen scheldes \* to schewen aboute, 176  
 Wiþ merkes of marchauntes \* y-medled bytwene,  
 Mo þan twenty and two \* twyes y-noumbred.  
 þer is none heraud þat haþ \* halt swich a rolle,  
 Rizt as a rageman \* haþ rekned hem newe. 180  
 Tombes opon tabernacles \* tyld opon lofte,  
 Housed in hirnes \* harde set abouten, and raised tombs  
 of alabaster and  
 marble,

155. [Ich C] With A (by evident mistake); yche B.

157. *opon*] vpon C.

158. *Say*] Sawe B.

159. *zemedede*] zemyd B; semed \*C. *epon*] apon B; opon C.

160. *Whouz*] How B; Whow C.

162. *aloft*] aloft B; alofte C.

166. *Orchezardes*] Orcheyardes C; Orchardes B. *erberes*] Erbars B. *euesed* AC] vsyd B.

171. *munte*] mount B.

172. *a woon*] it anon (over an erasure) B; cf. l. 164. *ybrld*] ybild C.

181. *opon*] vpon C.

182. *hirnes*] hernis B; hornes \*C.

- Of armede alabaustre · clad for þe nones,  
 [Made vpon marbel · in many maner wyse, 184  
 whereon lay sculptured  
 knyghtes, with  
 lovely ladies  
 beside them.  
 Knyghtes in her conisantes · clad for þe nones,]  
 All it semed seyntes · y-sacred opon erþe ;  
 And louely ladies y-wrouzt · leyen by her sydes  
 In many gay garmentes · þat weren gold-beten. 188  
 þouȝ þe tax of ten ȝer · were trewly y-gadered,  
 Nolde it nouzt maken þat hous · half, as y trowe.  
 þanne kam I to þat cloister · & gaped abouten 191  
 The cloister was  
 pillared and  
 painted, covered  
 with lead, and  
 paved with  
 painted tiles.  
 Whouȝ it was pilered and peynt · & portred well clene,  
 All y-hyled wiþ leed · lowe to þe stones,  
 And y-paued wiþ peynt til · iche poynte after oþer ;  
 Wiþ kundites of clene tyn · closed all aboute,  
 Wiþ lauoures of latun · louelyche y-greithed. 196  
 I trowe þe gaynage of þe ground · in a gret schire  
 Nolde aparaille þat place · oo poynt til other ende.  
 þanne was þe chaptire-hous wrouzt · as a greet chirche,  
 The chapter-house  
 was carved and  
 sculptured, with a  
 fine ceiling.  
 Coruen and couered · and queyntliche entayled ; 200  
 Wiþ semlich selure · y-set on lofte ;  
 As a Parlement-hous · y-peynted aboute.  
 þanne ferd y into fraytour · and fond þere an oþer, 203  
 The refectory was  
 like a royal hall,  
 and glazed like a  
 church.  
 An halle for an heyȝ kinge · an housholde to holden,  
 Wiþ brode bordes aboute · y-benched wel clene,  
 Wiþ windowes of glas · wrouzt as a Chirche.  
 þanne walkede y ferrer · & went all abouten,  
 And seiȝ halles full hyȝe · & houses full noble, 208  
 There were other  
 chambers, and  
 chapels, and  
 Chambers wiþ chymneyes · & Chapells gaie ;  
 And kychens for an hyȝe kinge · in castells to holden,

184, 185. *Omitted in A; I give these lines from B, only altering y<sup>e</sup> nonys into þe nones, and Knytes into Knyghtes.*

184. *vpon*] opon C.

185. *her conisantes*, ther conisante C.

187. *leyen*] lyen B.

188. *garmentes*] garnemens C.

192. *portred*] porteryd B; portreyd C.

194. *peynt til*] painetyl B (*indistinct, and with some letter written over paine*); poynttyl C.

199. *chaptire*] chapter B; chapitre C.

201. *yset*] yseet \*C; I-sett B.

206. *glas*] glase B; glaas C.

208. *seiȝ*] seigh C; see B.

209. *chymneyes*] chymeneyes C  
 chymbneis B.



- And her dortour y-dizte · wip dores ful stronge ;  
 Fermery and fraitur · with fele mo houses, 212  
 And all strong ston wall · sterne opon heiþe,  
 Wip gaie garites & grete · & iche hole y-glased ;  
 [And opere] houses y-nowe · to herberwe þe queene. Yet will these  
 And zet piþe bilderes wilne beggen · a bagg-ful of builders beg a  
 wheate 216 bagful of wheat of  
 Of a pure pore man · þat maie oneþe paie  
 Half his rente in a 3er · and half ben behynde !  
 þanne turned y a3en · whan y hadde all y-toted,  
 And fond in a freitour · a frere on a benche, 220 I found in a  
 A greet cherl & a grym · growen as a tonne, refectory a friar  
 Wip a face as fat · as a full bledder, on a bench, with  
 Blown bretfull of breþ · & as a bagge honged 223 fat face,  
 On boþen his chekes, & his chyn · wip a chol lollede, and a double-chin  
 As greet as a gos eye · growen all of grece ; big as a goose's  
 þat all wagged his fleche · as a quyk myre. egg.  
 His cope þat biclypped him · wel clene was it folden, His cope was of  
 Of double worstede y-dyzt · down to þe hele ; 228 doubled worsted,  
 His kyrtel of clene whijt · clenlyche y-sewed ; and his kirtle  
 Hyt was good y-now of ground · greyn for to beren. clean white.  
 I haylsede þat herdeman · & hendliche y saide,  
 "Gode syre, for Godes loue · canstou me graiþ tellen 232  
 To any worþely wijzt · þat [wissen] me coupe  
 Whou y schulde conne my Crede · Crist for to folowe, I prayed him to  
 þat leuede lelliche him-self · & lyuede þerafter, tell me of one who  
 þat feynede non falshede · but fully Crist suwede ? 236 could teach me  
 For sich a certeyn man · syker wold y trosten, my Creed.  
 þat he wolde telle me þe trowþe · and turne to none  
 oper.  
 And an Austyn piþe ender daie · egged me faste ; 239 "An Austin  
 friar," said I,

215. [And opere] A has to bere, by mistake for & opere; BC have And other. Cf. footnote to l. 72.

217. pure] B omits.

221. cherl] chorl C.

222. as fat as] so fat as C.

224. a chol] achole B.

225. As] So C. gos eye] gose egg B. all] full (over an erasure) B.

233. [wissen] willen A; wiffen B; wissen C; see l. 100.

235. leuede] leuid B; lenede \*C.

236. nou] no C.

237. trosten] tresten B.

- “told me his order was first found- ed.” **Þ**at he wolde techen me wel · he plyzt me his treupe,  
And seyde me, ‘serteyne · syþen Crist died  
Oure ordir was [euelles] · & erst y-founde.’”
- “First!” said he, **F**IRST, felawe!” quap he · “fy on his pilche!  
“he is a mere abortiou!” He is but abortijf · eked wip cloutes! 244  
He holdeþ his ordynaunce · wipe hores and þeues,  
And purchaseþ hem pryuileges · wip penyes so rounde;  
It is a pur pardoners craft · proue & asaye!  
For haue þei þi money · a moneþ þerafter, 248  
Certes, þeiþ þou come azen · he nyl þe nouzt knowen.
- Ours was the one first founded, and we are the best approved clerks.* But, felawe, *our* fundament · was first of þe opere,  
And we ben founded fulliche · wip-uten fayntise;  
And we ben clerkes y-cnowen · cunnyng in scole, 252  
Proued in procession · by processe of lawe.  
Of oure ordre þer beþ · bichopes wel manye,  
Seyntes on sundry stedes · þat suffreden harde;  
And we ben proued þe prijs · of popes at Rome, 256  
And of grettest degre · as godspelles telleþ.”
- We can be popes; we are of highest degree.”* “A! syre,” quap y þanne · “þou seyst a gret wonder,  
Sipen Crist seyde hym-self · to all his disciples,  
‘Which of þou þat is most · most schal he werche, 260  
And who is goer byforne · first schal he seruen.’”
- Lu. x. 18. And seyde, ‘he sawe satan · sytten full heyze  
And ful lowe ben y-leyd;’ · in lyknes he tolde,  
þat in pouernesse of spyrit · is spedfullest hele, 264  
And hertes of heynesse · harmeþ þe soule.
- I bade him fare- well, and left him. And þerfore, frere, fare well · here fynde y but pride;  
Y preise nouzt þi preching · but as a pure myte.”  
And anger[lich] y wandrede · þe Austyns to proue, 268
- THE AUGUSTINE FREES.** And mette wip a maister of þo men · & meklich y seyde,  
Then I found an “Maister, for þe moder loue · þat Marie men kalleþ,
241. *syþen*] *miswritten syzen in A, by mere slip*; sythyn B; syghthen C.  
242. [euelles] *From C*; yvellis B; y-uelles (*altered to y-ueffes*) A.  
248. þi] thy C; the B.  
249. nyl] nyll B; wil C.  
261. *byforne*] *aforne B.*
263. *ful lowe*] *fullowe AB*; fullow C (*but the words should be separated*).  
265. *heynesse*] *highnes (also heynesse in margin) B*; heyne \*C.  
267. *preching*] *prechyns \*C.*  
268. *angerlich*] *angreiche B*; anger-ich AC; *see note.*

- Knowest þou ouzt, þer þou comest · a creatour on erþe,  
 þat coude me my Crede teche · and trewliche enfourme,  
 Wip-uten flaterynge fare · & noþing feyne? 273  
 þat folweþ fulliche þe feiþ · and none other fables,  
 Wip-uten gabbynge of glose · as þe godspelles telleþ?  
 A Menour haþ me holly by-hyzt · to helen my soule,  
 For he seiþ þat her sekte · is sykerest on erþe, 277  
 And ben keepers of þe keye · þat Cristendome helpeþ,  
 And pur[l]liche in pouerte · þe apostells þey suweþ.”  
 “**A** LAS!” quap þe frier · “almost y madde in mynde,  
 To sen hou3 þis Minoures · many men begyleth!  
 Sopli, somme of þo gomes · haþ more good him-selue  
 þan ten kny3tes þat y knowe · of catell in cofers!  
 In fraytour þei faren best · of all þe foure orders, 284  
 And [vsen] ypocricie · in all þat þey werchen,  
 And prechen all of parfitnes · but loke now, y þe praye,  
 Nouzt but profre hem in pryvite · a [peny] for a masse,  
 And, but his enaue be prest · put out myne eize, 288  
 þou3 he hadde more money hid · þan marchantes of  
 wolle!  
 Loke hou3 þis loresmen · lordes bytrayen,  
 Seyn þat þey folwen fully · Fraunceses rewle,  
 þat in cotyng of his cope · is more cloþ y-folden 292  
 þan was in Fraunces froc · whan he hem first made.  
 And zet, vnder þat cope · a cote haþ he furred,  
 Wip foyns, or wip fitchewes · oþer fyn beuer,  
 And þat is cutted to þe kne · & queyntly y-botend, 296  
 Lest any spirituall man · asprie þat gile.  
 Fraunces bad his breþeren · barfote to wenden; 299  
 They ought to go

Austin friar, and asked where I could learn my Creed.

“A Minorite,” said I, “will heal my soul, for they keep the keys of Christendom.”

“Alas!” said he, “how these Minorites beguile men!”

Only offer one a penny, and see if his man is ready to take it!

See what large copes they have, and yet they have a furred coat beneath; cut short though, so as not to be seen.

They ought to go

271. *creatour*] creature C. vsune A.  
 273. *feyne*] fayne B. 286. *all of*] of all B.  
 275. *gabbynge*] gabynge C; gabb- 287. [*peny* BC] pany A.  
 ing B. *godspelles*] gospelles B. 288. *enaue*] knave B; name \*C.  
 276. *Menour*] minour B; Minoure 289. *prest*] Prest \*C.  
 C. 294. *haþ*] A *has* haþe (*badly*);  
 279. *purliche*] puriche ABC; *but* hath BC.  
*see l. 318.* 295. *fitchewes*] fichewes C; ficheu  
 283. *cofers*] cofres C. B.  
 285. [*vsen*] vsun C; vson B;

- barefoot, and they  
have buckled  
shoes, and hose  
silly cut short.
- Nou han þei buclod schon · for bleynynge of her heles,  
And hosen in harde weder · y-hamled by þe ancle, 300  
And spicerie sprad in her purse · to parten where hem  
lust.
- Lords love them,  
for they seem so  
humble, but they  
are pure hypo-  
crites.
- Lordes loueth hem well · for þei so lowe crouchen ;  
But knewen men her cautel · & her queynt wordes,  
þei wolde worchypen hem · nouzt but a litel, 304  
þe image of ypocricie · ymped vpon fendes.  
But, sone, zif þou wylte ben syker · seche þou no ferther,
- We were founded  
first, and were  
hermits in the  
wilderness,
- We friers be þe first · and founded vpon treuþe.  
Paul *primus* [*heremita*] · put vs him-selue 308  
Awey into wildernes · þe werlde to dispisen ;  
And þere we leng[e]den full longe · & lyueden full harde,
- till those friars  
invaded the  
towns,
- For-to all þis freren folke · weren founded in townes,  
And tauzten vnrulie ; · and þat we well aspiede, 312  
And for chefe charitie · we chargeden vs seluen ;  
In amending of þis men · we maden oure celles
- and we followed  
them, to amend  
them.
- To ben in cyties y-set · to styztile þe people,  
Preching & praying · as profetes schulden ; 316  
And so we holden vs þe heued · of all holy chirche.  
We haue power of the pope · purliche assoilen
- All that help our  
house we at once  
assoil.
- All þat helpen our hous · in helpe of her soules,  
To dispensen hem wiþ · in dedes of synne ; 320  
All þat amendeth oure hous · in money oþer elles,  
Wiþ corne oþer catell · or cloþes of beddes,  
Oþer bedys or broche · or breed for our fode.  
And zif þou hast any good · & wilt þi-selpe helpen, 324  
Helpe vs hertliche þerwiþe · & here I vndertake,  
þou schalt ben broþer of our hous · & a boke habben
- Do you help us,  
and we'll grant  
you a provincial

299. *bleynynge*] *bleynyng* B; *blen-*  
*ying* C.

300. *yhamled*] *y-hamelid* B.

301. *sprad*] *speed* B.

303. *knewen*] *knownen* \*C. *her*] A  
*wrongly has heir the second time.*

307. *be*] *beth* C; *bethe* B.

308. [*heremita*] *heremite* ABC  
*(wrongly)*; *see note.*

310. *lengeden*] *So in* C; *lengden*  
A; *longeden* B. *lyueden*] *leueden* C.

315. *styztile*] *stightlen* B; *styghtle*  
C.

317. *heued*] *hedd* B (*over erasure*);  
*hetheued* \*C.

320. *hem wiþ*] *with hem* B.

322. *oþer*] *or with* B. *of*] *to* BC.

- (At þe next chaptire) · clereliche ensealed ; letter ; I'll assoil  
And þanne oure prouinciall · haþ power to assoilen 328 you now."
- Alle sustren & breþeren · þat beþ of our order.
- And þouþ þou conne nouzt þi Crede · knele downe here ;
- My soule y sette for þyn · to asoile þe clene,
- In Couenaunt þat þou come againe · & katell vs  
bringe." 332
- And þanne loutede y adoun · & he me leue grauntede, I knelt down, he  
And so I partid him fro · & þe frere left. assoiled me, and I  
left him,
- þanne seid I to my-self · " here is no bote ; 335
- Heere pride is þe *pater-noster* · in preyinge of synne ;
- Here Crede is coueytise ; · now can y no ferþer, to go to the  
3et will y fonden forþ · & fraynen þe Karmes." Carmelites.
- þANNE totede y into a tauerne · & þer y aspyede THE CARMELITES,  
Two frere Karmes · wiþ a full coppe. 340 OR WHYTE  
BREERS.
- þere y auntrede me in · & ai[s]liche y seide,
- " Leue syre, for þe lordes loue · þat þou on leuest,
- Lere me to som man · my Crede for to lerne,
- þat lyueþ in [le]l lijf · and loueþ no synne, 344
- And gloseþ nouzt þe godspell · but halt Godes he[s]tes,
- And neþer money ne mede · ne may him nouzt letten
- But werchen after Godes worde · wiþ-outen any faile.
- A prechour y-professed · haþ plizt me his trewþe 348
- To techen me trewlie ; · but woldest þou me tellen
- For þei ben certayne men · & syker on to trosten,
- Y wolde quyten þe þi mede · as my miȝte were."
- " A TROFLE," quap he, " trewlie ! · his treuþ is full  
litell ! 352
- He dyned nouzt wiþ Domynike · siþe Crist deide !
- For wiþ þe princes of pride · þe prechours dwellen ; " They are the  
princes of pride,"

327. *chaptire*] chapitre B; chapitre  
C.
329. *sustren—breþeren*] susterne  
and brotherin B.
336. *preyinge*] preying B.
338. *forþ*] fourth B.
341. *auntrede*] aventeryd B. *ais-*  
*liche*] aillich B; aisliche C; see note.
343. *Lere*] teache (*over erasure*) B.
344. [*lel* C] Lei A; leele B.
345. *hestes*] In A and C miswritten  
hetes; but B has hestys.
352. A has *trofle*, correctly; C has  
*trefle*.

said one, "and  
live with lords.

þei bene as digne as þe devel · þat droppeþ fro heuene.  
Wip hertes of heynesse · wouþ halwen þei chircches 356  
And deleþ in devynitie · as dogges doþ bones !

þei medleth wip messages · & mariages of grete ;

þey leeuē wip lordes · wip lesynges y-nowe ;

þey biggeþ hem bichopryches · wip bagges of  
golde ; 360

þei wilneþ worchipes— · but waite on her dedes !

Note their goings-  
on at Hertford,

Herken at Herdforþe · hou þat þey werchen,

And loke whou þat þei lyven · & leue as þou fyndest.

þey [ben] conseilours of kinges · Crist wot þe  
soþe, 364

how they flatter  
the king.

Whou þey [curry] kinges · & her back clawep !

God leue hem leden well · in lyvinge of heven,

And glose hem nouzt for her good · to greven her  
soules ! 367

Where do they  
deal with *poor*  
men, that have  
nothing to give  
them ?

Y pray þe, where ben þei pryue · wip any pore wiztes,

þat maie not amenden her hous · ne amenden hem-  
seluen ?

þei prechen in proude harte · & preiseþ her order,

And werdliche worchype · wilneþ in erþe.

Leeue it well, lef man · & men ryzt-lokede, 372

They are prouder  
than Lucifer.

þer is more pryue pride · in prechours hertes

þan þer lefte in Lucyfer · er he were lowe fallen ;

þey ben digne as dich water · þat dogges in bayteþ.

Loke a ribaut of hem · þat can nouzt wel reden 376

One who cannot  
say his Responds  
expounds the laws.

His rewle ne his respondes · but be pure rote,

Als as he were a connyngē Clerke · he casteþ þe lawes,

355. *as digne*] so digne C.  
356. *þei*] the BC. (OBS. the =  
they frequently in B.)

358. *medleth*] meddeley B (*cf. l.*  
107); medeleth C.

359. *leeuē*] lyven B.

360. *biggeþ*] beggen (*over erasure*)  
B.

362. *Herdforþe*] Hartffourde B.

363. *leeue*] beleve (*over erasure*) B.

364. [*ben* C] beyn A ; bene B.

365. [*curry*] *Such is the reading ;*  
*in A miswritten carry ; currey B ;*  
*curreth C.*

366. *lene hem*] leve hym B ; leue  
hem C.

372. *Leeue*] Ken B (*but leave is*  
*written at end of l. 371*).

374. *er*] or C.

378. *casteþ*] *The MS. seems to have*  
*hasteth, perhaps for kasteþ ; kasteth*  
B ; casteth C.

- Nouzt lowli but lordly · & leesinges lyeþ.  
 For ryzt as Menoures · most ypocricie vseþ, 380 Minorites are  
 Ryzt so ben Prechers proude · purlyche in herte. hypocrites, and  
 But, Cristen creatour · we Karmes first comen Prechers proude.  
 Even in Elyes tyme · first of hem all, But we Carmeliten  
*And* lyven by our Lady · & lelly hir seruen 384 date from the  
 In clene comun life · kepen vs out of synne ; days of Elijah,  
 Nowt proude as prechours beþ · but prayen full still and pray for all  
 For all þe soules and þe lyves · þat we by lybbeth. that help us.  
 We connen on no queyntyse · (Crist wot þe soþe !) 388  
 But bysieþ vs in oure bedes · as vs best holdeþ.  
 And þerfore, leue leel man · leue þat ich sygge,  
 A masse of vs mene men · is of more mede Our masses are of  
 And passeth all praiers · of þies proude freers. 392 most worth.  
*And* þou wilt zyuen vs any good · y would þe here Give us some-  
 graunten thing, and you are  
 To taken all þy penance · in peril of my soule ; pardoned ;  
 And þouþ þou conne nouzt þy crede · clene þe assoile, and never mind  
 So þat þou mowe amenden our hous · wiþ money oþer your Creed."  
 elles, 396  
 Wiþ som katell oþer corne · or cuppes of siluer."  
 "TREWELY, frere," quap y þo · "to tellen þe þe soþe,  
 þer is no peny in my palke · to payen for my "I haven't a  
 mete ; penny," said I ;  
 I haue no good ne no gold · but go þus abouten, 400 "but teach me my  
 And travaile full trewlye · to wynnen withe my fode. Creed, and I will  
 But woldest þou for godes loue · lerne me my Crede, do what I can."  
 Y schuld don for þy will · whan I wele hadde."  
 "Trewlie," quap þe frere · "a fol y þe holde ! 404 "You must be a  
 þou woldest not weten þy fote · & woldest sich kacchen ! fool," said he,  
 Our pardon & oure preiers · so beþ þey nouzt parted, "like the cat that  
 won't wet her feet.

380. *Menoures*] mynors B Min-oures C.

388. *connen*] cannon B; couuen \*C. *on*] struck through in B. *soþe*] southe C.

393. *would*] woll B. *þe*] ye \*C.

394. *in*] on B.

395. *conne nouzt*] cannot B.

396. *mowe*] now B.

399. *palke*] palk B; pakke C.

403. *þy will*] the will B; the will C.

406. *parted*] parten \*C.

Oure power lasteþ nouzt so feer · but we some peny  
fongen.

I must go now to  
a housewife who  
has promised us  
ten pounds in her  
will.

Fare well," quap þe frere · "for y mot heþen fonden,  
And hyen to an houswife · þat haþ vs bequeþen 409  
Ten pounde in hir testament · to tellen þe soþe.

Ho draweþ to þe deþe-ward · but zet I am in drede  
Lest ho turne her testament · & þerfore I hyze 412  
To hauen hir to our hous · and henten zif y miȝte

I hope to get an  
Annual for my-  
self."

An Anuell for myn owen [vse] · to helpen to cloþe."  
"Godys forbode," quap [his] fellawe · "but ho forþ passe  
Wil ho is in purpose · wiþ vs to departen ; 416  
God let her no lenger lyven · for letteres ben manye."

THE PLOUGH-  
MAN.

**P**ANNE turned y me forþe · and talked to my-selue  
Of þe falshede of þis folk · whou feiples they  
[weren].

And as y wente be þe waie · wepyng for sorowe, 420

[1 MS. "&"]  
Wandering on, I  
saw a ploughman,  
with a coarse coat,  
torn hood, and  
knobbed shoes.

[I]<sup>1</sup> seiz a sely man me by · opon þe plow hongen.

His cote was of a cloute · þat cary was y-called,

His hod was full of holes · & his heer oute,

Wiþ his knopped schon · clouted full þykke ; 424

His ton todeden out · as he þe londe tredde,

His hosen ouerhongen his hokschynes · on eueriche a  
side,

Al beslombred in fen · as he þe plow folwede ;

Twey myteynes, as mete · maad all of cloutes ; 428

þe fyngers weren for-ward · & ful of fen honged.

He was in mud  
almost up to the  
anle.

þis whit waselede in þe [fen] · almost to þe ancle,

Foure roþeren hym by-for · þat feble were [worþen] ;

407. *so feer*] soffer B.

414. [*vse* BC] vs A.

415. [*his* BC] this A.

417. [*letteres*] lettes ther (*over  
erasure, and with ther above the line*)  
B.

419. [*whou*] how B; whow C.  
[*weren* C] werne A; werren B.

421. [*I*] *I propose this reading*;  
A has &; BC And.

426. [*hokschynes*] hockshynes B

(*where ck is written over an erased k*);  
hokshynes C. a] *nearly erased in* B.

427. [*beslombred*] beslomered C.

428. [*mete*] nettes (*over erasure*) B;  
meter \*C.

429. [*forwerd*] Forweryd B.

430. [*fen* B] fern A; feen C.

431. [*worþen*] *Such should be the  
reading; we find worþi* A; *worthe* B;  
*worþi* C; *no doubt the original had  
worþē = worþen.*



Men myzte reken ich a ryb · so reufull þey weren. 432

His wijf walked him wiþ · wiþ a longe gode,

In a cutted cote · cutted full heyze,

Wrapped in a wynwe schete · to weren hire fro  
weders,

His wife was  
beside him, in a  
coat cut very  
short.

Barfote on þe bare ijs · þat þe blod folwede. 436

And at þe londes ende laye · a litell crom-bolle,

And þeron lay a litell childe · lapped in cloutes,

And tweyne of tweie zeres olde · opon a-noþer syde,

And alle þey songen o songe · þat sorwe was to heren ;

þey crieden alle o cry · a carefull note. 441

þe sely man sizede sore, & seide · “ children, beþ  
stille ! ”

Their youngest  
child lay in a  
bowl, and two  
other children  
were beside them.

þis man loked opon me · & leet þe plow stonden,

And seyde, “ sely man, why syzest þou so harde ? 444

3if þe lakke lijfode · lene þe ich will

Swich good as God haþ sent · go we, leue broþer.”

Y saide þanne, “ naye, sire · my sorwe is wel more ;

For y can nouzt my Crede · y kare well harde ; 448

For y can fynden no man · þat fully byleueþ,

To techen me þe heyze weie · & þerfore I wepe.

For y haue [foned] þe freers · of þe foure orders, 451

For þere I wende haue wist · but now my wit lakkeþ ;

And all my hope was on hem · & myn herte also ;

But þei ben fully feibles · and þe fend sueþ.”

“ A ! broþer,” quap he þo · “ beware of þo foles !

For Crist seyde him-selfe · ‘ of swiche y zou warne,’ 456

And false profetes in þe feiþ · he fulliche hem calde,

‘ *In vestimentis ouium* · but onlie wiþ-inne

þei ben wilde wer-wolues · þat wiln þe folk robben.’

þe fend founded hem first · þe feiþ to destroie, 460

He asked me why  
I sighed so sore.

I told him,  
because I could  
not learn my  
Creed,

though I had  
hoped the friars  
would teach me.

“ Beware of  
them,” said he,  
“ as Christ bade  
(Mat. vii. 15).

The fend founded  
them.

432. *reufull*] *rewfulle* B ; *rentful*  
\*C.

435. *wynwe*] *wynow* B.

437. *laye*] *lath* \*C. *bolle*] *bole* B.

439. *olde*] *elde* B.

445. *3if þe*] *yif thou* B ; *Gif the* C.

447. *wel*] *myche* B.

451. [foned] *Such is the true  
reading ; yet ABC have fondes, shew-  
ing a mistake in their common  
original. So also in l. 6.*

457. *hem*] *hym* B.

460. *fend*] *fen* \*C.

- And by his craft þei comen in · to combren þe chirche,  
 By þe coueiteise of his craft · þe curates to helpen ;  
 But now þey hauen an hold · þey harmen full many.  
 þei don nouzt after Domynick · but dreccheþ þe puple,  
 Ne folwen nouzt Fraunces · but falslyche lybben, 465  
 And Austynes rewle · þei rekneþ but a fable,  
 But purchaseþ hem pryuylege · of popes at Rome.  
 þei coueten confessions · to kachen some hire,  
 And sepultures also · some wayten to cacchen ; 469  
 But oper cures of Cristen · þei coueten nouzt to haue,  
 But þere as wynnyng lijþ · he lokeþ none oper.”
- They follow not their founders' rules.
- They covet confessions and burials.”
- “What is your name ?” said I.  
 He replied,  
 “Piers the Ploughman.”
- “W houz schal y nemne þy name · þat neizboures þe kalleþ ?” 472
- “Peres,” quap he, “þe pore man · þe plowe-man y hatte.”
- “A ! Peres,” quap y þo · “y pray þe, þou me telle  
 More of þise tryflers · hou trechurly þei libbeþ ?  
 For ichon of hem hap told me · a tale of þat oper, 476  
 Of her wicked lijf · in werlde þat hy lybbeþ.  
 I trowe þat some wikked wyzt · wrouzte þis orders  
 [þoru] þat gleym of þat gest · þat Golias is y-calde,  
 Oper ells Satan him-self · sente hem fro hell 480  
 To cumbren men wiþ her craft · Cristendome to schenden ?”
- I asked him to tell me more of them,
- and whether their rise was due to “Golias” or to Satan.
- He replied that it was Satan's doing.
- CAIM.
- “Dere broþer,” quap Peres · “þe devell is ful queynte ;  
 To encombren holy Chirche · he casteþ ful harde,  
 And fluricheþ his falsnes · opon fele wise, 484  
 And fer he casteþ to-forn · þe folke to destroye.  
 Of þe kynrede of Caym · he caste þe freres,  
 And founded hem on Farysens · feyned for gode ;
465. *Ne*] He \*C.  
 468. *coueten*] *So in C* ; *couetun A* ; *coveyton B. See l. 470.*  
 469. *sepultures*] *So in AB* ; *sepulturus \*C.* *cacchen*] *kachen B* ; *lacchen C.*  
 473. *hatte*] *hott B.*  
 476. *þat*] *B omits.*  
 477. *hy*] *he BC.*
479. [þoru] *This excellent reading is suggested by MS. B ; which has Thoughe, altered to Thorughe ; we find Trowe ye A ; Trow ye C ; both are corruptions, due to the line above.*  
 484. *fele*] *sely B.*  
 486. *kynrede*] *kyndred B.*  
 487. *on*] *or B.* *Farysens*] *Sarysenes \*C.* *gode*] *good B ; God \*C.*

- But þei wiþ her fals faiþ · michel folk schendeþ, 488  
 Crist calde hem him-self · kynde ypoerites ;  
 How often he cursed hem <sup>1</sup> · well can y tellen [1 MS. "heme."]  
 He seide ones him-self · to þat sory puple,  
 'Wo worþe 3ou, wy3tes · wel lerned of þe lawe !' 492  
 Eft he seyde to hem-selfe · 'wo mote 3ou worþen,  
 þat þe tounbes of profetes · tildeþ vp heize !  
 3oure faderes fordeden hem · & to þe deþ hem brouzte.'  
 Here y touche þis two · twynnen hem I þenke ; 496  
 Who wilneþ ben wisere of lawe · þan lewde freres,  
 And in multitude of men · ben maysters y-called,  
 And wilneþ worchips of þe werlde · & sitten wiþ heye,  
 And leueþ louyng of God · and lownesse behinde? 500  
 And in beldinge of tombes · þei trauaileþ grete  
 To chargen her chirche-flore · and chaungen it ofte.  
 And þe fader of þe freers · defouled hir soules,  
 þat was þe dygginge devel · þat dreccheþ men ofte. 504  
 þe diuill by his dotage · dissaueþ þe chirche,  
 And put in þe prechours · y-paynted wiþouten :  
 And by his queyntise þey comen in · þe curates to  
 helpen,  
 But þat harmede hem harde · and halp hem full litell !  
 But Austines ordynaunce · was on a good trewþe, 509  
 And also Domynikes dedes · weren [deruelich] y-vsede,  
 And Frauncis founded his folke · fulliche on trewþe,  
 Pure parfit prestes · in penaunce to lybben, 512  
 In loue and in lownesse · & lettinge of pride,  
 Grounded on þe godspell · as God bad him-selue.  
 But now þe glose is so greit · in gladding tales

[1 MS. "heme."]  
 Christ called such  
 men hypocrites  
 (Luke xi. 46, 47).

Friars are just  
 like Pharisees ;  
 they like to be  
 called *masters*,

they build fine  
 tombs.

The father of  
 friars is the devil.

It was he who  
 brought in the  
 Preachers.

Yet Austyn,  
 Dominick, and  
 Francis founded  
 them in truth.

But now the

491. *ones*] *ons* BC.  
 493. *hemselfe*] *hym-self* B. *3ou*] *ye* B.  
 494. *tildeþ*] *tildith* (*altered to bildith*) B; *tildeth* C.  
 496. *þis two*] *theise tow* B. *twynnen*] and *twynnen* B.  
 498. *in*] *in a* B.  
 499. *þ*] and to B. *wiþ heye*] *highe* (*over erasure*) B.

501. *beldinge*] *bulding* B; *beldyng* C; *but the true reading is probably teldinge*; cf. ll. 181, 494.

503. *defouled*] *desouled* \*C.

504. *dygginge*] *digging* B; *dygyng* C.

507. *þe*] B *omits*.

510. [*deruelich*] *derulich* (*or dernelich*) A; *deruelich* (*or dernelich*) B; *dernelich* \*C. See note.

Gospel is overlaid  
with glosses.

Christ said,  
Blessed are the  
poor in spirit  
(Mat. v. 3).

How many friars  
are thus poor?  
Try them, and  
see how touchy  
they are.

WYCLIFFE.  
Remember how  
they persecuted  
Wycliffe.

Christ said,  
Blessed are the  
meek.

Blame friars a  
little, and, if they  
do not call thee  
'Ijar'—

þat turneþ vp two-folde · vnteyned opon trewþe, 516  
þat þei bene cursed of Crist · y can hem well proue ;  
Wip-uten his blissinge · bare beþ þey in her werkes.  
For Crist seyde him-selfe · to swiche as him folwede,  
' Y-blessed mote þei ben · þat mene ben in soule ;' 520  
And alle pouere in gost · God him-self blisseþ.  
Whou fele freers fareþ so · fayn wolde y knowe !  
Proue hem in proces · & pynch at her ordre,  
And deme hem after þat þey don · & tredles, y leue  
þei willn wexen pure wroþ · wonderliche sone, 525  
And schewen þe a scharp will · in a schort tyme,  
To wilne wilfully wrapþe · & werche þerafter.  
Wytnesse on Wycliff · þat warned hem wip trewþe ;  
For he in goodnesse of gost · grayþliche hem warned  
To wayuen her wik[e]dnesse · & werkes of synne.  
Whou sone þis sori men · [seweden] his soule,  
And oueral lollede him · wip heretykes werkes ! 532  
And so of þe blessinge of God · þei bereþ litel mede.  
Afterward anoþer · onliche he blissede,  
þe meke of þe [myddel-erde] · þouruz myzt of his fader.  
Fynd foure freres in a flok · þat folweþ þat rewle, 536  
þanne haue y tynt all my tast · touche and assaie !  
Lakke hem a litil wizt · & here lijf blame,  
But he lepe vp on heiz · in hardynesse of herte,  
And nemne þe anon nouzt · & þi name lakke 540  
Wip proude wordes apert · þat passeth his rule,  
Boþe wip ' þou leyst, & þou lext' · in heynesse of sowle,

517. *þei bene*] many bene B; they ben C.

521. *pouere*] power C.

522. *Whou*] how B.

525. *wexen*] A apparently has wexon, with x and o imperfectly formed; woxon B; wexon C; wexen is better spelling. *wroþ*] worthe B.

527. *wrapþe*] wrath B; wraþe C; in A written so as to resemble wrappe.

531. [*seweden*] So in BC; lewden A (by mistake of l for f).

535. [*myddel-erde*] So in C;

myddel hertes A; myddell herth B (which probably shews the spelling of the original).

536. *þat rewle*] the rewle B.

539. *hardynesse*] herdnes B; harden-esse C.

540. *nemne*] miswritten memne A; nemne BC.

541. *apert*] apart B (with the second a written over an erasure).

542. *leyst*—*lext*] leyst and the lixst B; leyst and thou lext C.

- And turne as a tyrant · þat turmentþ him-selue,  
 A lord were loþere · for to leyne a k[n]aue 544 *why then—a lord  
 is more reluctant  
 to give to a beggar  
 than to them!*
- þanne swich a beggere · þe beste in a toun!  
 Loke nowe, leue man · beþ nouzt þise i-lyke  
 Fully to þe Farisens · in fele of þise poyntes?  
 Al her brod beldyng · ben belded withe synne, 548  
 And in worchipe of þe werlde · her wynnynge þei  
 holden ;
- þei schapen her chapolories · & streccheþ hem brode, *Then they stretch  
 out their scapu-  
 lars, and spread  
 on high their  
 hems.*  
 And launceþ heize her hemmes · wiþ babelyng in stretes ;  
 þei ben y-sewed wiþ whizt silk · & semes full queynte,  
 Y-stongen wiþ stiches · þat stareþ as siluer. 553
- And but freres ben first y-set · at sopers & at festes, *They must be set  
 first at feasts,*  
 þei wiln ben wonderly wroþ · ywis, as y trowe ;  
 But þey ben at þe lordes borde · louren þey willeþ,  
 He mot bygynne þat borde · a beggere, (wiþ sorwe !)  
 And first sitten in se · in her synagoges, 558 *and receive  
 honour in their  
 minsters.*
- þat beþ here heyze helle-hous · of Kaymes kynde !  
 For þouȝ a man in her mynster · a masse wolde heren,  
 His sizt schal so [be] set · on sundrye werkes,  
 þe penounes & þe pomels · & poyntes of scheldes *The arms and  
 pennons there  
 destroy deuotion.*  
 Wiþ-drawen his deuocion · & dusken his herte ;  
 I likne it to a lym-zerde · to drawen men to hell, 564  
 And to worchipe of þe fend · to wrappen þe soules.  
 And also Crist him-selfe seide · to swiche ypocrites, *Christ said, They  
 love greetings in  
 the markets (Mat.  
 xxiii. 7),*  
 ‘He loueþ in markettes ben met · wiþ gretynge of  
 pouere,  
 And lowynge of lewed men · in Lent[e]nes tyme.’ 568  
 For þei han of bichopes y-bouzt · wiþ her propre siluer,

543. *turne*] turnnen C.544. *loþer*] lether B. *leyne*] beyne  
 B (*with b over erasure*). *knaue* BC.546. *beþ*] beth BC; in A *apparent-  
 ly written heþ*.548. *beldyng*] bilding B. *belded*]  
 bylded B.550. *schapen*] sharpen B. *chapo-  
 lories*] capolories B. *brode*] abrode B.551. *launceþ*] lannceth C.552. *þ]* B omits.557. *þat*] the B.559. *helle-hous*] helle houndes (!)  
 B.561. [*be*] *So in* B; by AC.562. *penounes*] penonnes C.568. *Lentenec* C] Lentnes A; Len-  
 tonys B.

- And purchased of penaunce · þe puple to assoile.  
 But money may maken · mesur of þe peyne,  
 (After þat his power is to payen) · his penance schal  
 faile; 572  
 (God leue it be a good help · for hele of þe soules !)
- and to be called of  
 men, Rabbi,  
 Rabbi; And also þis myster men · ben maysters icalled,  
 þat þe gentill Iesus · generallyche blamed,  
 And þat poynt to his apostells · purly defended. 576
- But friars have  
 forgotten whether  
 or not their  
 founders wished  
 them to become  
 masters. But freres hauen forzetten þis · (and þe fend suweþ,  
 He þat maystri louede · Lucifer þe olde),  
 Wher Fraunceis or Domyunik · oþer Austen ordeynide  
 Any of þis dotardes · doctur to worþe, 580  
 Masters of dyvinitie · her matens to leue,  
 And chereliche as a cheueteyne · his chambre to holden  
 Wiþ chymene & chapell · & chesen whan him liste,  
 And serued as a souereine · & as a lorde sitten. 584
- Such a man over-  
 lays God's words  
 with glosses. Swiche a gome godes wordes · gryslische gloseþ;  
 Y trowe, he toucheþ nouzt þe text · but takeþ it for a  
 tale.
- Christ said, Do  
 not ye premeditate  
 (Mark xiii.  
 11). God forbad to his folke · & fullyche defended 587  
 þey schulden nouzt stodyen biforn · ne sturen her wittes,  
 But sodenlie þe [same] word · with her mowþ schewe  
 þat weren zeuen hem of God · þoruþ gost of him-selue.
- But friars medi-  
 tate over their  
 legends. Now mot a frere studyen · & stumblen in tales,  
 And leuen his matynes · & no masse singen, 592  
 And loken hem lesynges · þat likeþ þe puple,  
 To purchasen him his pursfull · to paye for þe drynke.  
 And broþer, when bernes ben full · & holly tyme passed,
- After harvest  
 come the friars,

572. *After þat*] For as B (*over an erasure*). *payen*] peye so B (*with so over erasure*).

573. *lene*] leve B; leue C.

574. *myster*] mynster B.

575. *gentill*] genltil (*sic*) C.

577. *suweþ*] *The original must have had fuweþ*; A has fu luweth, *with fu struck through*; sewith B; suweth C.

579. *Wþer*] Nor (*over erasure*) B;

Where C.

580. *doctur—worþe*] B has doctur to worth, *which is struck out, and followed by pryde for to suen*; *where suen is afterwards altered to ensewen*.

583. *chesen*] chosen C.

589. [*same*] *So in BC*; A has some.

590. *himselue*] hem selue C.

595. *bernes*] barnys B. *holly*] *So in AB*; holy C.

- hanne comen cursed freres · & croucheþ full lowe ; 596 and beg some-  
 A losel, a lymitour · ouer all þe lond lepeþ, thing at every  
 And loke, þat he leue non house · þat somewhat he ne house.  
 lacche ;
- And þer þei gilen hem-self · & godes worde turneþ.
- Bagges and beggyng · he had his folk leuen, 600 Christ said, Take  
 And only seruen him-self · & hijs rewle sechen, no thought for  
 And all þat nedly nedep · þat schuld hem nouzt lakken. your life (Mat.  
 v. 25).
- Whereto beggen þise men · and ben nouzt so feble ; Why do these  
 (Hem faileþ no furringe · ne cloþes at full), 604 being maimed or  
 But for a lustfull lijf · in lusted to dwellen ? in lack of meat ?
- Wip-uten any trauaile · vntrewliche [hy] lybbeth.
- Hy beþ nouzt maymed men · ne no mete lakkeþ,
- Y-cloped in curious cloþ · & clenliche arayed. 608
- It is a laweles lijf · as lordynges vsen, They live like  
 Neyþer ordeyned in ordir · but onlie libbeþ. lords.
- Crist bad blissen · bodies on erþe 611 Christ said,  
 þat wepen for wykkednes · þat he byforne wrouzte ;— that weep now  
 þat ben fewe of þo freres · for þei ben ner dede (Luke vi. 21).  
 And put all in pur [clap] · wip pottes on her hedes ; But friars never  
 þanne [he] waryeþ & wepeþ · & wicheþ after heuen, weep till they are  
 And fyep on her falshedes · þat þei bifore deden ; 616 all but dead ;
- And þerfore of þat blissinge · trewlie, as y trowe, small blessing  
 þei may trussen her part · in a terre powze ! will be theirs
- All þo blissed beþ · þat bodyliche hungreþ ;—
- þat ben þe pore penyles · þat han ouer-passed 620 Christ said,  
 þe poynt of her pris lijf · in penaunce of werkes, meaning such as  
 are past work,

596. comen] In A loosely written, resembling cornen; comen BC.

598. he] ye B. lacche] lache C.

600. Bagges] to bagges B (to written in the margin). leuen] lyven B.

601. hijs] So in AB, and no doubt in their original; C has the simpler form his.

604. at] atte C.

606. [hy] Inserted to shew the sense more clearly; not in ABC.

608. Y-cloped] Thei clothed \*C. cloþ] clothes B.

610. onlie] oneth B; onethe C.

614. [clap] Suggested by C, which has clath; in A it is written clay; B has cleye; see note.

615. [he BC] ho A. wicheþ] whissbiþ B.

618. trussen] trullen B (by mistaking f for l). terre powze] tree ploughe (altered to poghe) B; terre powghe C.

621. of (2)] and B.

- And mown nouzt swynken ne sweten · but ben swyþe feble,
- or maimed, or lepers. Oþer maymed at myschef · or meseles syke,  
And here good is a-gon · & greueþ hem to beggen. 624  
þer is no frer in feiþ · þat fareþ in þis wise ;
- But unless a friar can beg well, he is soon made away with. But he maie beggen his bred · his bed is ygreiþed ;  
Vnder a pot he schal be put · in a pryvie chambre,  
þat he schal lyuen ne last · but litell while after ! 628
- Blessed are the merciful ; Al-miȝti god & man · þe merciabile blessed  
þat han mercy on men · þat misdouen hem here ;—  
But whoso for-gabbed a frere · y-founden at þe stues,  
And brouȝte blod of his bodi · on bak or on side, 632  
Hym were as god greuen · a greit lorde of rentes.
- but one had better harm a lord than a friar. He schulde sonner bene schryven · (schortlie to tellen)  
þouȝ he kilde a comlye knyzt · & compased his morþer,  
þanne a buffet to beden · a beggere frere. 636
- Blessed are the pure in heart ; þe clene hertes Crist · he curtey[s]liche blisseð,  
þat [coueten] no katel · but Cristes full blisse,  
þat leueþ fullliche on God · & lellyche þenkeþ  
On his lore and his lawe · & lyueþ opon trewþe ;— 640
- but friars follow another rule. Freres han forȝeten þis · & folweþ an oþer ;  
þat þei may henten, þey holden · by-hirneþ it sone.  
Heir hertes ben clene y-hid · in her hize cloistre,  
As kurren from kareyne · þat is cast in dyches ! 644
- Blessed are the peacemakers ; but a friar's sting is worse than a wasp's. And parfite Crist · þe pesible blisseð,  
þat bene suffrant & sobre · & susteyne anger ;—  
A-say of her sobernesse · & þou miȝt y-knownen,  
þer is no waspe in þis werlde · þat will wilfullok[e]r  
styngen, 648

623. *maymed*] mayned \*C. *syke*] lyke \*C.

631. *for-gabbed*] *So in BC; in A resembles* forgalbed.

635. *morþer*] morthur B; mother \*C.

637. *Crist*] of crist AB; C omits of, and it seems better to do so. *curteysliche*] curteyliche ABC (*wrongly, be-*

*cause wrong in their common original*).

638. [*coueten* C] couetyne A; coveyten B. *blisse*] bles B.

643. *y-hid*] yhad B.

648. *wilfulloker*] wilfullokr A; wilfuller B; folloke \*C. Cf. l. 527.



- For stappynge on a too · of a styncande frere !  
 For neþer souereyn ne soget · þei ne suffreþ neuer ;  
 All þe blissing of God · beouten þei walken ;  
 For of her suffraunce, for soþe · men seþ but litell ! 652  
 Alle þat persecution · in pure lijf suffren,  
 þei han þe benison of god · blissed in erþe ;—  
 Y praie, parceyue now · þe pursut of a frere,  
 In what measure of meknesse · þise men deleþ. 656  
 Byhold opon Wat Brut · whou bisiliche þei pursueden  
 For he seyde hem þe soþe · & 3et, syre, ferþere,  
 Hy may no more marren [hym] · but men telleþ  
 þat he is an heretike · and yuele byleueþ, 660  
 And prechiþ it in pulpit · to blenden þe puple ;  
 þei wolden awyrien þat wizt · for his well dedes ;  
 And so þei chewen charitie · as chewen schaf houndes.  
 And þei pursueþ þe pouere · & passeþ pursutes, 664  
 Soþe þey wiln & þei wolden · y-worþen so grete  
 To passen any mans miȝt · to morþeren þe soules ;  
 First to brenne þe bodye · in a bale of fjr, 667  
 And syþen þe sely soule slen · & senden hyre to helle !  
 And Crist clerlie forbadde · his Cristene, & defended  
 þei schulden nouȝt after þe face · neuer þe folke  
 demen ;”—  
 “ Sur,” y seide my-self · “ þou semest to blamen.  
 Why dispisest þou þus · þise sely pore freres, 672  
 None oper men so mychel · monkes ne preistes,  
 Chanons ne Charthous · þat in chirche serueth ?  
 It semeþ þat þise sely men · han somewhat þe greved  
 Oper wiþ word or wiþ werke · & þerfore þou wilnest

Blessed are they  
 which are perse-  
 cuted for right-  
 eousness' sake.

Remember how  
 they persecuted  
 Walter Brute,

and preached that  
 he was a heretic.

They would gladly  
 murder a man's  
 soul, having first  
 burnt his body.

And Christ said,  
 Judge not accord-  
 ing to the appear-  
 ance”—

“ Sir,” said I,  
 “ why despise  
 these poor friars ?

Have they grieved  
 you in any way ?”

649. *stappynge*] stamping B. *styn-  
 cande*] resembles styntande in A,  
 owing to confusion between c and t ;  
 stynkande B ; styncand C.

651. *þe*] thei C. *beouten*] bene  
 outten B.

652. *seþ*] say B ; sey C.

657. *Wat*] Water BC.

659. *Hy*] he B. [*hym*] required

by the sense ; ABC have hem.

661. *in*] in the B.

663. *chewen*] shewin B. *chewen*]  
 shewen B. *schaf*] shaffen B ; shaf C.  
 669. *forbadde*] loosely written as  
 forladde A ; forbad BC.

671. *Sur*] But B ; Sire C.

674. *charthous*] charter house B.

- To schenden oþer [schamen] hem · wiþ þi sharpe speche,  
 And harmen holliche · & her hous greuen?"
- "Nay," said he,  
 "I speak for the  
 good of thy soul.  
 The monks are  
 not much better  
 than the friars,  
 but have been led  
 astray by them.
- "I prairie þe," quath Peres · "put þat out of þy mynde ;  
 Certen for sowle hele · y saie þe þis wordes. 680  
 Y preise nouzt possessioners · but pur lytel ;  
 For falshed of freres · hap fulliche encombred  
 Manye of þis maner men · & maid hem to leuen  
 Here charite & chastete · & [chesen] hem to lustes, 684  
 And waxen to werldly · and wayuen þe trowþe,  
 And leuen þe loue of her God · and þe werlde seruen.  
 But for falshed of freres · y fele in my soule,  
 (Seynge þe synfull lijf) · þat sorweþ myn herte 688  
 How þei ben cloped in cloþ · þat clennest scheweþ ;  
 For aungells & Arcangells · all þei whijt vseþ,  
 And alle Aldermen · þat bene ante tronum.  
 Þise tokens hauen freres taken · but y trowe þat a fewe  
 Folwen fully þat cloþ · but falsliche þat vseþ. 693  
 For whijt in trowþe bytokneþ · clenness in soule ;  
 3if he haue vnder-neþen whijt · þanne he aboue wereþ,  
 Blak, þat bytokneþ · bale for oure synne,  
 And mournynge for misdede · of hem þat þis vseþ, 697  
 And serwe for synfull lijf ; · so þat cloþ askeþ.  
 Y trowe þer ben nouzt ten freres · þat for synne  
 wepen,  
 For þat lijf is here lust · & þereyn þei libben 700  
 In fraiture & in fermori · her fostringe is synne ;  
 It is her mete at iche a mel · her most sustenaunce.  
 Herkne opon Hyldegare · hou homliche he telleþ  
 How her sustenaunce is synne ; · & syker, as y trowe,
- Friars are falsely  
 clothed in white,  
 like angels or  
 elders.  
 White betokens  
 cleanness in soul.  
 Black, sorrow for  
 our sin.  
 Friars weep not  
 for sin, but feed  
 on it.  
 Note how St  
 Hildegare says
677. oþer] or B. [schamen]  
 shamen BC ; A here repeats schenden.  
 þi] the \*C.  
 678. harmen] So too in B ; hannen  
 \*C.  
 681. possessioners] pocessioners B ;  
 pocessioneres C.  
 684. [chesen] miswritten as schosen  
 A ; chosen B ; shosen \*C ; see l. 583.
685. werldly] worldly B ; werly C.  
 wayuen] waynen \*C.  
 691—693. Written in margin in  
 B, and l. 693 corruptly given.  
 694. in] of B.  
 700. þereyn] therby BC. þei] thi \*C.  
 703. opon Hyldegare] open Hilde-  
 gare B ; (and over it is written of  
 Lidgate (!) as a gloss).

- Weren her confessiones · clenli destrued, 705 their sustenance  
 Hy schulde nouzt beren hem so bragg · ne [belden] so  
 heyze,  
 (For þe fallynge of synne · socourep þo foles) ;  
 And bigileþ þe grete · wiþ glanerynge wordes, 708 They beguile the  
 Wiþ glosinge of godspells · þei gods worde turneþ, great with  
 And pasen all þe pryuylege · þat Petur after vsed. flattery.  
 þe power of þe Apostells · þei pasen in speche,  
 For to sellen þe synnes · for siluer oþer mede, 712 They sell pardons  
 And purlyche a pena · þe puple assoileþ, for money,  
 And a culpa also · þat þey may kachen  
 Money oþer money-worthe · & mede to fonge, 716  
 And bene at lone & at bode · as burgeses vsithe. and serve Satan.  
 þus þey seruen Satanas · & soules bygileþ,  
 Marchantes of malisons · mansede wreches !  
 þei vsen russet also · somme of þis freres,  
 þat bitokneþ trauaile · & trowþe opon erþe ;— 720 Some of them  
 Bote loke whou þis lorels · labouren þe erþe, wear russet,  
 But freten þe frute þat þe folk · full lellich biswynkeþ ; which means  
 Wiþ trauail of trewe men · þei tymbren her houses, hard labour.  
 And of þe curious cloþe · her copes þei biggen ; 724 But they build  
 And [als] his getynge is greet · he schal ben good their houses with  
 holden, the earnings of  
 others.  
 And ryzt as dranes doþ nouzt · but drynkeþ vp þe  
 huny, As drones drink  
 the honey which  
 bees have  
 gathered,  
 Whan been wiþe her bysynesse · han brouzt it to hepe,  
 Ryzt so fareþ freres · wiþ folke opon erþe ; 728  
 þey freten vp þe fu[r]ste-froyt · & falsliche lybbeþ. so friars eat up  
 the first-fruits,  
 But alle freres eten nouzt · y-lich good mete,  
 But after þat his wynnynge is · is his well-fare ;  
 And after þat he bringeþ home · his bed schal ben  
 grayþed ; 732 each one accord-  
 ing to what he has  
 got by begging.

705. clenli] clearly (over erasure) B.

abode (!) B.

706. [belden] So in BC; in A mis-  
 written helden.

722. freten] Ferton B.

707. þe] the C.

725. [als BC] all A.

716. lone &amp; at bode] love &amp; at

728. fareþ] Farith the B.

729. freten] Fretton B.

- And after þat his rychesse is rauzt · he schal ben redy  
serued.
- But see þi-self in þi sizt · whou somme of hem walkeþ  
Wip cloutede schon · & clopes ful feble,  
Wel nei; for-werd · & þe wlon offe; 736
- Some go poorly clad, whilst his fellow wears red shoes,  
And his felawe in a froke · worþ swiche fiftene,  
A-rayd in rede sc[h]on · (& elles were reupe !)  
And sexe copes or seven · in his celle hongep.  
þou; for fayling of good · his fellawe schulde sterue, 740  
He wolde nouzt lenen him a peny · his lijf for to holden.  
Y mi;zt tymen þe troiffardes · to toilen wip þe erpe,  
Tylyen & trewliche lyven · & her flech tempren !  
and will not give him a penny.
- [1 MS. Nov.] Now ! mot ich soutere his sone · setten to schole, 744  
And ich a beggers brol · on þe booke lerne,  
And worþ to a writere · & wip a lorde dwell,  
Oper falsly to a frere · þe fend for to seruen !  
So of þat beggers brol · a bychop schal worþen, 748  
Among þe peres of þe lond · prese to sitten,  
And lordes sones lowly · to þo losells aloute,  
Knyztes croukeþ hem to · & cruceþ full lowe ;  
And his syre a soutere · y-suled in grees, 752  
His teep wip toylinge of leþer · tatered as a sawe !  
Alas ! þat lordes of þe londe · leuþ swiche wrechen,  
And lenep swiche lorels · for her lowe wordes !  
þey schulden maken bichopes · her owen breþren childre,  
Bishops should be of gentle blood, not of such as these.  
Oper of some gentil blod · & so it best semed, 757  
And foster none faytours · ne swiche false freres  
To maken fatt & full · & her fleche combren !  
Their nature is better suited to cleaning ditches.  
For her kynde were more · to y-clense diches 760  
þan ben to sopers y-set first · and serued wip siluer !

736. *forwerd*] Forweryd B. *wlon*]

*So in AC*; wolne B.

738. *schon*] See l. 735; scon A;  
sone (*altered* to scone) B; stone \*C.  
*reuthe*] renthe \*C.

739. *hongep*] hongid B.

740. *good*] Perhaps we should read  
food, for this improves both the sense

and alliteration.

744. *schole*] skale B.

745. *brol*] brawle B.

748. *brol*] brawle B. *bichop*]

bushope B; Abbot \*C.

755. *leneth*] leueth C.

756. *bichopes*] Abbottes \*C.

- A great bolle-full of benen · were betere in his wombe,  
 And wip þe randes of bakun · his baly for to fillen,  
 þan pertriches or plouers · or pekokes y-rosted, 764  
 And comeren her stomakes · wip curious drynkes,  
 þat makeþ swiche harlottes · hordome vsen,  
 And wip her wicked worde · wymmen bitraieþ !  
 God wold her wonynge · were in wildernesse, 768  
 And fals freres forboden · þe fayre ladis chaumbres !  
 For knewe lordes her craft · trewlie, y trowe,  
 þey schulden nouzt haunten her hous · so homly on  
 niztes,  
 Ne bedden swiche broþels · in so brode schetes, 772  
 But scheten her heued in þe stre · to scharpen her  
 wittes ;  
 Ne ben kynges confessours of custom · ne þe counsell  
 of þe rewme knowe !  
 For Fraunces founded hem nouzt · to faren on þat wise,  
 Ne Domynek dued hem neuer · swiche drynkers to  
 worþe, 776  
 Ne Helye ne Austen · swiche lijf neuer vsed,  
 But in pouerte of spirit · spended her tyme.  
 We haue sene our-self · in a schort tyme,  
 Whou freres wolden no flech · among þe folke vsen ;  
 But now þe harlottes · han hid thilke rewle, 781  
 And, for þe loue of oure lorde · haue leyd hire in  
 water.  
 Wenest þou þer wold so fele · swiche warlawes worþen,  
 Ne were wordlyche wele · & her welfare ?  
 þei schulden deluen & diggen · & dongen þe erþe,  
 And mene mong-corn bred · to her mete fongen, 786  
 And wortes flechles wroughte · & water to drinken,  
 And werchen & wolward gon · as we wrecches vsen ;

Beans and bacon  
 would suit them  
 better than  
 partridges or  
 plovers.

Would that they  
 were forbidden  
 the fair ladies'  
 chambers

Lords should not  
 give them sheets,  
 but shut their  
 heads in the  
 straw.

Their founders  
 never lived as  
 they do.

Once they would  
 eat no flesh, but  
 they have sunk  
 that rule—for the  
 love of our Lord

They ought to dig  
 and delve, and eat  
 common bread,  
 and vegetables  
 without meat, and  
 work and go  
 roughly clad."

762. *benen*] beuen \*C.

763. *randes*] bandes BC.

769. *þe*] B omits.

771. *homly*] hōly C.

773. *scheten*] shottin B ; sheten C.

782. *oure*] the B.

783. *Wenest þou*] Wenestowe B.

785. *diggen*] dyken BC.

786. *menemong*] mene mogge B.

*to*] and B.

An aunter zif þer wolde on · amonge an hol hundred  
Lyuen so for godes loue · in tyme of a wynter !” 790

“But, Piers,” said  
I, “teach me my  
Creed.”

“Leue Peres,” quap y þo · “y praie þat þou me tell  
Whou y maie conne my Crede · in Cristen beleue?”

“Leue broþer,” quap he · “hold þat y segge,  
I will techen þe þe trowþe · & tellen þe þe soþe.” 794

## CREDO.

THE CREDE.  
Believe on God  
who made the  
world;

**L**EUUE þou on oure Louerd God · þat all þe werld  
wrouzte,

Holy heuen opon hey · hollyche he fourmede, 796

And is almizti him-self · ouer all his werkes,  
And wrouzt as his will was · þe we[r]lde and þe heuen ;

and on Jesu  
Christ, his only  
Son, conceived of  
the Holy Ghost,

And on gentyl Jesu Crist · engendred of him-seluen,  
His own onlyche sonne · Lord ouer all y-knowen, 800

[þat] was clenly conseued · clerlye, in trowþe,

Of þe hey Holy Gost · þis is þe holy beleue ;

born of the maiden  
Mary,

And of þe mayden Marye · man was he born,  
Wip-uten synnfull sede · þis is fully þe beleue ; 804

Wip þorn y-crowned, crucified · & on þe crois dyede,

And syþen his blissed body · was in a ston byried,

crowned with  
thorn, crucified,  
dead, and buried ;

And descended a-doune · to þe derk helle,

And fet oute our formfaderes · & hy full feyn weren ;

who descended  
into hell, and  
fetched thence  
our forefathers,  
ascended into  
heaven, and  
sitteth on the  
Father's right  
hand,

þe þridde daye rediliche · him-self ros fram deef, 809

And on a ston þere he stod · he steiz vp to heuene,

And on his fader rizt hand · redeliche he sitteþ,

þat al-mizti god · ouer all oþer whyztes ;

whence he shall  
come to judge the  
quiek and the  
dead ;  
and in the Holy  
Ghost ; the  
Catholic church ;

And is hereafter to komen · Crist, all him-seluen,

To demen þe quyke and þe dede · wip-uten any doute ;

And in þe heize holly gost · holly y beleue, 815

And generall holy chirche also · hold þis in þy mynde ;

[The communion of sayntes · for soth I to the sayn ;

789. An aunter] A Vanter B ; In  
A, An aunter zif is miswritten An  
aunterz if.

796. opon] eth on \*C.

798. werlde] worlde B ; werld C.

801. [þat] that BC ; It A.

804. þe] thy B.

810. steiz] miswritten striz in A ;  
stigh B ; steigh C.

812. whyztes] whight ys B.

817—821. In C only ; see note.  
These lines are spurious.

- And for our great sinnes · forgiuenes for to getten,* [Five lines added  
in 1553.]  
*And only by Christ · clenlich to be clenled ;*  
*Our bodies again to risen · right as we been here,* 820  
*And the lijf euerlasting · leue ich to hebben ; Amen.]*  
 And in þe [sacrement] also · þat soþfast God on is, And in the  
Presence in the  
sacrament,  
 (Fullich his fleche & his blod) · þat for vs deþe þolede.—  
 And þou3 þis flaterynge freres · wyln for her pride, 824  
 Disputen of þis deyte · as dotardes schulden,  
 þe more þe matere is moved · þe [masedere hy] worþen. which friars  
dispute about ;  
 Lat þe losels alone · & leue þou<sup>1</sup> þe trewþe,  
 For Crist seyde it is so · so mot it nede worþe ; 828 [1 MS. you ]  
 þerfore studye þou<sup>1</sup> nouzt þeron · ne stere þi wittes,  
 It is his blissed body · so bad he vs beleuen. which cannot be  
explained,  
     þise maystres of dyvinitie · many, als y trowe,  
 Folwen nouzt fully þe feiþ · as fele of þe lewede. 832  
 Whou3 may mannes wijt · þoru3 werk [of] him-selue,  
 Knowen Cristes pryuitie · þat all kynde passeþ ?  
 It mot ben a man · of also mek an herte, It is meek-hearted  
men that receive  
the Holy Ghost.  
 þat myzte wiþ his good lijf · þat Holly Gost fongen ;  
 And þanne nedep him nouzt · neuer for to studyen ; 837  
 He mi3te no maistre [ben] kald · (for Crist þat de-  
     fended),  
 Ne puten [no] pylion · on his pild pate ;  
 But prechen in parfite lijf · & no pride vsen. 840  
     But all þat euer I haue seyde · soþ it me semeþ,  
*And all þat euer I haue writen · is soþ, as I trowe,* All that I have  
ever written is  
true, as I suppose.  
*And for amending of þise men · is most þat I write ;*  
 God wold hy wolden ben war · & werchen þe better !  
     But, for y am a lewed man · paraunter y mi3te I speak not with  
authority, but ask  
 Passen par auenture · & in som poynt erren, 846
- 822, 823. *Not in C ; see note.*  
 822. [sacrement B] sacremens A.  
 825. þis] Godes C. deyte] diet B.  
 826. masedere hy] So in C ; mase-  
 dere hi B ; A corruptly has mose dere  
 by.  
 828—830. *Not in C.*  
 831. þise] theise B ; For these C.  
 833 [of BC] or A. wijt] wit B.  
 836. þat Holly] the holly B ; the  
 holy C.  
 838. [ben C] bene B ; in A mis-  
 written þen.  
 839. [no BC] on A.  
 845. paraunter] paraventure B.  
 846. par auenture] paraventur B ;  
 par aduenture C.

pardon if I have  
missaid.

Y will nouȝt þis matere · maistrelly auowen ;  
But ȝif ich haue myssaid · mercy ich aske, 848  
& praie all maner men · þis matere amende,  
Iche a word by him-self · & all, ȝif it nedep.

God save all  
faithful friars, and  
amend all that are  
false!

God of his grete myȝte · & his good grace  
Saue all freres · þat faipfully lybben, 852  
And alle þo þat ben fals · fayre hem amende,  
And ȝyue hem wijt & good will · swiche dedes to  
werche  
þat þei maie wynnen þe lif · þat euer schal lesten !  
AMEN. 855

854. *wijt*] wyt B; wiit C.



## NOTES.

LINE 1. *Cros*, the cross. Alluding probably to the mark of a cross which was sometimes prefixed to the *beginning* of a piece of writing, especially of an alphabet in a primer. See *Notes and Queries*, 3rd S. xi. 352. The alliteration in this line is defective, and it scans badly.

6. *patred*. The readings are, *patres*, AC; *partes* B; but neither of these make sense, whilst the following extract shews that *patred* is the right word.

“Ever he *patred* on theyr names faste,  
That he had them in ordre at the laste.”

How the Plowman lerned his Paternoster :

*Hazlitt's Early Pop. Poetry*, vol. i. p. 215.

17. And if = an if, i. e. if. The spelling *and* for *an* is not uncommon; it still stands, e. g., in our Bibles, Mat. xxiv. 48, and *and* = *if* in Lancelot of the Laik, l. 1024.

*coupe*, teach; *sub.* the Creed.

20. *wilneþ*, desireth: the writer distinguishes between *wille* and *wilneþ*; cf. l. 17.

25. *leueden*, believed; *leuen* (believe) would suit the context better.

27. *for-þan*, A.S. *for-þan*, *for-þam*, from *for* and *þam* (dat. case of the demonstrative pronoun *se*, *seð*, *þæt*); for that, with a view to that. The sense is, “But, by questioning them with a view to finding out what they know, many are there found to fail.”

28. This interview with the Minorite was doubtless suggested by Passus IX of *Piers Plowman* (Text A). There, William asks two Minorites if they know where Do-wel is, whereupon—“Mari, (quod þe Menour) · Among vs he dweleþ,” &c. See the Preface.

29. *fourde ordres*. See Massingberd; *Hist. of Reformation*, chap. vii., on “The Mendicant Orders; their rise and history.” A few of the most useful facts about the four orders of friars are here collected for convenience, arranged in the order in which they are more fully spoken of further on. They were,

(1.) The Minorites, Franciscans, or *Gray Friars*, called in France *Cordeliers*. Called Franciscans, from their founder, St Francis of Assisi;

Minorites (in Italian, *Frati Minori*, in French, *Frères Mineurs*), as being, as he said, the humblest of the religious foundations; Gray Friars, from the colour of their habit; and *Cordeliers*, from the hempen cord with which they were girded. For further details, see *Monumenta Franciscana*, which tells us that they were fond of physical studies, made much use of Aristotle, preached pithy sermons, exalted the Virgin, encouraged marriages, and were the most popular of the orders, but at last degenerated into a compound of the pedlar or huckster with the mountebank or quack doctor. See Mrs Jameson's *Legends of the Monastic orders*, and the *Life of St Francis* in Sir J. Stephen's *Ecclesiastical Biography*. They arrived in England in A.D. 1224. Friar Bacon was a Franciscan.

(2.) The Dominicans, Black Friars, Friars Preachers, or Jacobins. Founded by St Dominick, of Castile; order confirmed by Pope Honorius in A.D. 1216; arrived in England about 1221. Habit, a white woollen gown, with white girdle; over this, a white scapular; over these, a black cloak with a hood, whence their name. They were noted for their fondness for preaching, their great knowledge of scholastic theology, their excessive pride, and the splendour of their buildings. The Black *Monks* were the Benedictines.

(3.) The Augustine or Austin Friars, so named from St Augustine of Hippo. They clothed in black, with a leathern girdle. They were first congregated *into one body* by Pope Alexander IV., under one Lanfranc, in 1256. They are distinct from the Augustine *Canons*.

(4.) The Carmelites, or *White* Friars, whose dress was white, over a dark-brown tunic. They pretended that their order was of the highest antiquity and derived from Helias, i. e. the prophet Elijah; that a succession of anchorites had lived in Mount Carmel from his time till the thirteenth century; and that the Virgin was the special protectress of their order. Hence they were sometimes called "Maries men," as at l. 48, with which cf. l. 384.

As the *priority* of the foundation of the orders is so often discussed in the poem, I add that the dates of their *first* institution are, Augustines, 1150; Carmelites, 1160; Dominicans, 1206; Franciscans, 1209.

31. MS. A. is here obviously corrupt.

32. The reading *wittede* is a mistake made from confusion with *wyten*. *Wende* (I weened) is the true past tense of *wenen*; as in l. 452.

41. *that thou madde*, that thou art mad. Mr Wright printed "that thou [art] madde;" but cf. l. 280, and Chau. Mil. Ta., l. 373.

43. *jugulers*. See Tyrwhitt's Chaucer; note to Cant. Tales, v. 11453. The *jougleurs* or *jogelors* (*joculatores*) were originally minstrels who could perform feats of sleight of hand, &c., but they soon became mere mountebanks, and the name became, as here, a term of contempt. We read of "*jogulors, dremers, and rafars*," (*reavers, spoilers*); see Apology attributed to Wycliffe; (Camden Soc.) p. 96.

43. *iapers, of kynde*, jesters, by nature. Cf.

"Bote *Iapers* and *Iangelers* · Iudas Children."

*Piers Plouman*, A. prol. 35 (ed. Skeat, 1867).

44. *Lorels* and *losels* (used further on) are much the same word. We find in the Glosse of Spenser's Shepheard's Calendar (August) the following: "*Lorrell*, a losell;" which shews that the latter form was the one longest used.

46. *gestes*, legends, tales; see Tyrwhitt's Chaucer; note to v. 13775.

48. Compare,

"Horum quidam prædicant quod sunt ex *Maria*;

Alii tamen asserunt quod sunt ex *Helia*."—*Pol. Poems*, i. 262.

"The Carmelites, sometimes called the brethren of the blessed Virgin, were fond of boasting their familiar intercourse with the Virgin Mary. Among other things, they pretended that the Virgin assumed the Carmelite habit and profession; and that she appeared to Simon Sturckius, general of their order, in the thirteenth century, and gave him a solemn promise, that the souls of those Christians who died with the Carmelite scapulary upon their shoulders, should infallibly escape damnation."—*Warton, Hist. Eng. Poet.* ii. 132; ed. 1824.

Hone (Ancient Mysteries, p. 281) reminds us that some of the most absurd tales told by the Carmelites have been not very long ago revived in "A Short Treatise of the Antiquity, Privileges, &c., of the Confraternity of our Blessed Lady of Mount Carmel." (London, 1796, 18mo.)

54. *to fynde*; compare the phrase, *to find* one in meat and drink.

65. *freres of the Pye*. These were the Fratres de Pica (Walsingham, *Hist. Anglicana*, i. 182); they were called *Pied Friars* from their dress being a mixture of black and white, like a magpie. 35

"With an O and an I, fuerunt *Pyed Freres*,

Quomodo mutati sunt, rogo dicat Pers."

*Pol. Poems*, i. 262.

67. *glut* = A.S. *gluto*, a glutton.

70. "People may bequest their money, &c." A line seems lost between 69 and 70.

72. "*Robartes men*, or Roberdsmen, were a set of lawless vagabonds, notorious for their outrages when *Pierce Plowman* was written. The statute of Edward the Third (an. reg. 5, c. xiv) specifies 'divers manslaughteres, felonies, and robberies, done by people that be called *Roberdesmen*, *Wastours*, and *drawlatches*.' And the statute of Richard the Second (an. reg. 7, c. v.) ordains, that the statute of King Edward concerning *Roberdsmen* and *Drawlacches* shall be rigorously observed. Sir Edward Coke (*Instit.* iii. 197) supposes them to have been originally the followers of Robert Hood in the reign of Richard the First. See Blackstone's *Comm.* B. iv. ch. 17."—*Warton, Hist. E. P.* ii. 133; ed. 1824.

77. *lulling—miracles*. For some account of the Miracle Plays, see *Massingberd*; *Hist. Reformation*, p. 124; and Hone's *Ancient Mysteries*. I have little doubt that the particular one here alluded to is "Mystery VIII," at p. 67 of Hone, about the Miraculous Birth of Christ and the Midwives, the story of which was derived from the Protevangelion, cap. xiv., given in Hone's "Apocryphal Gospels." Compare

“To pleyes of *miracles*, and mariages.”

*Chaucer, Wyf of Bathes Prologe*; i. 558.

79. *that the lace, &c.* Henry, in his Hist. of Britain, i. 459, says—  
“Amongst the ancient Britons, when a birth was attended with any difficulty, they put certain girdles made for that purpose about the women in labour, which they imagined gave them immediate and effectual relief. Such girdles were kept with care, till very lately, in many families in the Highlands of Scotland.”—*Brand, Pop. Antiq.* ii. 67. This custom seems to have been derived (says Brand) from the Druids. See also a ballad in “The Ballad Book,” p. 320. It is easy to see how the friars gladly re-adapted this superstition.

“For in his male he had a pilwebeer,  
Which that, he saide, was *oure lady veyl.*”

*Chaucer, Prol.* i. 695.

84. *gold by the eighen*, gold by the eyes. This probably refers to the ornaments of golden net-work worn at this time at the side of the face, thickest just beside the eyes, and which were, in reality, part of the caul. For specimens of them, see Fairholt's *Costume in England*, pp. 182, 183. So too, *gretchedede* seems to refer to the size of the head-dress. The *Wyf of Bath's* weighed nearly ten pounds.

89. “Forsoth manye walken, whom I haue seide oft to you, forsoth now and I wepinge seie, the enemyes of Cristis cross, whos ende deeth, or *perisching*, whos god is the wombe, and glorie in confusioun of hem.”—*Wycliffe's Bible*, Philip. iii. 18, 19.

91. *slauthe*, sloth. I retain this reading (that of both the MSS.), though I have been told that it certainly ought to be *slaughte* = slaughter, because it refers to “whos ende is deeth,” quoted in the note above. But the author is not very accurate in quotation, and has already introduced the expression *Such slomerers in slepe*, to which *slauthe* answers well enough. *Sloth* and *Gluttony* are constantly mentioned together by our old writers, as they were the two of the seven deadly sins which seemed most akin; so here, “their *sloth* is their end, and their *gluttony* is their God.”

97. *and fele mo othere*, and (so are) many others besides.

100. The error “willen” in MS. A arose from misreading “wiffen,” written with two long *esses*; see foot-notes to ll. 233, 531, and 577.

103. *Menures*, Minorites. There was some truth in the Minorites' assertion. They seem to have kept their vows of poverty much more strictly than did the other orders. At first, they settled in the poorer suburbs of crowded towns, among the dregs of the population, and they nursed the patients in the leper hospitals. See the most interesting preface to “*Monumenta Franciscana*,” by J. S. Brewer.

107. Compare the account of friars in *Pol. Poems*, i. 330;—

“At the wrastling, and at the wake,  
And chiefe chauntours at the nale (*ale*);

*Market-beaters*, and *medling* make,

Hoppen and houten with heve and hale," &c.

116. *to coueren with our bones*, to cover our bones with. There are several other instances of this curious position of the word *with* in the poem. See l. 401.

118. *burwz*, a borough; i. e. a large convent. The buildings of the Minorites were, at first, of the meanest and most inexpensive kind; but they gradually began to imitate the other orders.

119. *Chapaille*, chapel. Perhaps the other reading *chapille*, a chapter-house, Lat. *capitulum*, is better.

121. *paynt*, painted; *pulshed*, polished.

124. *cnely*, kneel. The infinitive in *y* is common enough.

128. The glazing of windows for convents by rich benefactors seems to have been a favourite way of buying pardons; see *Monumenta Franciscana*, p. 515; "De Vitratione Fenestrarum." Cf. also *Piers Plowman*, A. iii. 48—62.

Warton's note on this line is—"Your figure kneeling to Christ shall be painted in the great west window. This was the way of representing benefactors in painted glass."—*Hist. Eng. Poet.* ii. 135; ed. 1814.

141. So in *Piers Plowman* (ed. Wright, p. 189).

"Why menestow thi mood for a mote

In thi brotheres eithe,

Sithen a beem in thyn owene

Ablyndeth thiselve;"

where *menestow* should be *meuestow* = *movest* thou.

153. *the first*, i. e. the Dominicans, as being the wealthiest, proudest, and most learned. In the next line they are called the *Preachers*.

157. "It was a singular change when the friars began to dwell in palaces and stately houses. . . . Richard Leatherhead, a grey friar from London, having been made bishop of Ossory, in A.D. 1318, pulled down three churches to get materials for his palace. But the conventual buildings, especially of the Black Friars, are described by the author of *Pierce Plowman's Creed*, a poet of Wycliffe's time, as rivalling the old monasteries in magnificence."—*Massingberd, Hist. Eng. Reform.* p. 119. The following remark on this subject is striking. "Swilk maner of men bigging (*building*) thus biggings semen to turn bred into stones; that is to sey, the bred of the pore, that is, almis beggid, into hepis of stonis, that is, into stonen howsis costly and superflew, and therfor they semen werrar (*worse*) than the fend, that askid stonis into bred."—*Apology attributed to Wycliffe*, p. 49 (Camden Soc.). Compare also,

"Hi domos conficiunt miræ largitatis,

Politis lapidibus, quibusdam quadratis;

Totum tectum tegitur lignis levigatis;

Sed transgressum regulæ probant ista satis.

With an O and an I, facta vestra tabent,

Christus cum sic dixerat, 'foveas vulpes habent.'"

*Pol. Poems*, p. 255, vol. i.

158. *Say I, Saw I.* We generally find *sez* or *seiz*. See ll. 208, 421.

159. *Y zemedle*, I gazed with attention; *zerne*, eagerly, earnestly.

161. *knottes*; see Glossary.

165. *posternes in pryuytè.* "These private posterns are frequently alluded to in the reports of the Commissioners for the Dissolution of the Monasteries in the reign of Henry VIII. One of them, speaking of the abbey of Langden, says, 'Wheras immediately descendyng fro my horse, I sent Bartlett your servant, with all my servantes to circumcept the abbay and surely to kepe *all bake dorres and startyng hoilles*, and I myself went alone to the abbottes logeyng joyning upon the feldes and wode, *evyn lyke a cony clapper full of startyng hoilles.*'—(MS. Cotton. Cleop. E. iv. fol. 127.) Another commissioner (MS. Cotton. Cleop. E. iv. fol. 35), in a letter concerning the monks of the Charter-house in London, says, "These charter-howse monkes wolde be called solytary, but to the cloyster dore ther be above xxiiij. keys in the handes of xxiiij. persons, and hit is lyke my letters, unprofytable tayles and tydinges and sumtyme perverse concell comynthe and goythe by reason therof. Allso to the buttrey dore ther be xij. sundrye keyes in xij. [meus] hands, wherein symythe to be small husbandrye." Quoted from Mr Wright's notes to the "Crede."

166. *euesed*, bordered. This verb is formed from the A.S. *efese*, the modern English *eaves*, which (it ought to be remembered) is, strictly, a noun in the *singular* number.

167. *entayled*, carved, cut. This word occurs in Spenser, *Faerie Queene*, Bk. ii. c. 3, st. 27, and c. 6, st. 29.

168. *toten*, to spy; a *tote-hyll* is a hill to spy from, now shortened to *Tothill*.

169. "The price of a carucate of land, would not raise such another building." Warton's note.

172. *awaytede a woon*, beheld a dwelling; *ybuld*, built.

174. *crochetes*, crockets (see Glossary). They were so named from their resembling bunches or locks of hair, and we find the word used in the latter sense in the *Complaint of the Ploughman*.

"They kembe her *crokettes* with christall."

*Pol. Poems*, vol. i. p. 312.

175. *ywritten full thicke*, inscribed with many texts or names.

176. *schapen scheldes*, "coats of arms of benefactors painted in the glass." Warton's note; which see, for examples of them.

177. *merkes of marchauntes*, "their symbols, cyphers, or badges, drawn or painted in the windows. . . Mixed with the arms of their founders and benefactors stand also the *marks* of tradesmen and merchants, who had no arms, but used their marks in a shield like Arms. Instances of this sort are very common."—Warton's note, where he also says they may be found in Great St Mary's, Cambridge, in Bristol cathedral, and in churches at Lynn.

180. *rageman*. Alluding to the Ragman Rolls, originally "a collection of those deeds by which the nobility and gentry of Scotland were

tyrannically constrained to subscribe allegiance to Edward I. of England, in 1296, and which were more particularly recorded in four large rolls of parchment, consisting of 35 pieces, bound together, and kept in the tower of London."—*Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary*. See also Halliwell's *Dictionary*, where it is explained that several kinds of written rolls, especially those to which many seals were attached, were known by the name of Ragman or Ragman-roll. The modern *rigmarole* is a curious corruption of this term.

181. *tyld opon lofte*, set up on high. It means that the tombs were raised some three or four feet above the ground.

182. *housed in hirnes*, enclosed in corners or niches. The old printed text has *hornes*, for which Warton suggested *hurnes*, and he guessed rightly; but it is odd that he did not observe that MS. B has *hernis*, as he collated the passage with that MS.; besides which, the old *glossary* has *hurnes*, shewing that *hornes* is a mere misprint.

183. In the church of the Grey Friars, near Newgate, were buried, in all, 663 persons of quality. Stowe says "there were nine tombs of alabaster and marble, invironed with strikes of iron, in the choir." See preface to the "Chronicle of the Grey Friars of London;" (Camden Soc., 1852) p. xxi.

184, 185. MS. A omits these lines, obviously owing to the repetition of *clad for the nones*.

185. "In their *cognisances*, or surcoats of arms."—Warton.

188. *gold-beten*, adorned with beaten gold.

194. *peynt til*, painted tiles. MS. B has *paine*, by obvious error for *painte*; the scribe has apparently altered it to *pavine*, thinking it meant *paving*. The old printed text has *poynt til*, on which Warton's note is, "*Point en point* is a French phrase for in order, exactly. This explains the latter part of the line. Or *poynttil* may mean tiles in squares or dies, in chequer-work. See Skinner in POINT, and Du Fresnoie in PUNCTURA. And then, *ich point after oither* will be *one square* after another. So late as the reign of Henry the Eighth, so magnificent a structure as the refectory of Christ-church at Oxford was, at its first building, paved with green and yellow tiles. The whole number was 2600, and each hundred cost 3s. 6d." But Warton was slightly misled by the old text; *poynnte* merely means *bit, piece*, as in l. 198. It is true that *poynttil* occurs in many dictionaries, glossaries, &c., but in every case I find that the only quotation given for it is the present line, and I hold it to be a mere misprint. *Peynt* = painted is common enough (see l. 192), but I doubt the existence of *poynt* in the sense of *pointed* or *squared*. Indeed, Mr Ellis, rejecting Warton's explanation, proposed to explain *poynttil* by *pantiles*, which, however, cannot be used for paving, not being *flat*.

"And yit, God wot, unnethe the foundement

Parformed is, ne of oure *pavymment*

Is nought a *tyle* yit withinne our wones."

*Chaucer, Sompnoures Tale*, l. 403.

197. I trow the produce of the land in a great shire would not furnish

that place (hardly) one bit towards the other end; a stronger phrase than "from one end to the other," as Warton explains it. *Oo* properly = *oue*.

199. *Chapire-hous*. "The chapter-house was magnificently constructed in the style of church-architecture, finely vaulted, and richly carved."—Warton.

201. With "a seemly ceiling, or roof, very lofty."—Warton.

202. *y-peynted*, painted. Before tapestry became fashionable, the walls of rooms were painted. For proofs, see Warton's long note.

203. *fraytour*, refectory.

209. *chymneyes*, fireplaces. Langlande complains bitterly that the rich often despise dining in the hall, and eat by themselves "in a privy parlour, or in a chamber with a chimney." *Piers Plowman*: ed. Wright, p. 179, vol. i.

211. *dortour*, dormitory.

212. *fermery*, infirmary; *fele mo*, many more. Chaucer uses *fermerere* for the person who had charge of the infirmary.—*Sompnoures Tale*, l. 151; *dortour* occurs in the same passage, just 4 lines above.

216. Compare

"Yif us a busshel whet, or malt, or reye,  
A Goddes kichil, or a trip of chese,  
Or elles what yow list, we may not chese," &c.

*Sompnoures Tale*, l. 38.

217. *onethe*, with difficulty.

219. *ytoted*, investigated, espied.

220. Friars are also accused of fatness in the following:—

"I have lyued now fourty 3ers  
And fatter men about the neres  
3it sawe I neuer then are thes frers  
In contreys ther thai rayke.

*Meteles*, so *meigre* are thai made, and penaunce so *puttes ham down*  
That ichone is an *hors-lade*, whan he shal trusse of toun!"<sup>1</sup>

*Pol. Poems*, i. 264.

222. "With a face as fat as a full bladder that is blown quite full of breath; and it hung like a bag on both his cheeks, and his chin lolled (or flapped) about with a jowl (or double-chin) that was as great as a goose's egg, grown all of fat; so that all his flesh wagged about like a quick mire (quagmire)."

228. The line "with double worsted well ydight" occurs in the Complaint of the Ploughman; *Pol. Poems*, i. 334.

229. The *kirtle* was the under-garment, which was worn *white* by the Black Friars. The outer *black* garment is here called the *cope*. The *kirtle* was white, and good enough in its *ground* (texture) to admit

<sup>1</sup> *nores*, kidneys; compare Ger. *Niere*. Of course, the expressions "*meteles*" and "*meigre*" are ironical. *Rayke*, wander about; cf. l. 72 of the "*Crede*;" *hors-lade*, a horse-load; *trusse of toun*, pack off out of the town. The same passage is in *Monumenta Franciscana*, p. 602.



of being dyed in *grain* (of a fast colour). The kirtle "appears to have been a kind of tunic or surcoat, and to have resembled the hauberk or coat of mail; it seems in some instances to have been worn next the shirt, if not to serve the purpose of it, and was also used as an exterior garment by pages when they waited on the nobility."—*Strutt, Dress and Habits*, 349. When Jane Shore did penance, she was "out of all array save her *kirtle* only."—*Holinshed*, p. 1135; ed. 1577.

233. The mistake "willen" in MS. A arose from misreading "wiffen." See note to l. 100.

242. *euellles*, evil-less; but there seems little force in this epithet, and I feel sure the reading is corrupt. The other readings are no better.

247. "It is merely a pardoner's trick; test and try it!"

252. An allusion to the reputation of the Dominicans for scholastic learning.

256. "Three popes, John XXI., Innocent V., and Benedict XI., were all taken from the order of Black Friars, between A.D. 1276-1303."

*Massingberd, Eng. Ref.*, p. 117.

263. *in tylnes*, by way of parable.

268. The spelling *angerlich* is the correct one; compare

"The kings law wol no man deme  
*Angerliche* without answe're."

*Comp. of Ploughm. Pol. Poems*, i. 323.

271. *creatour*, creature.

274. "That fully follow the faith, as the gospels tell us, apart from fables, and from mystifications of paraphrases and glosses. For the meaning of *glose*, compare

"I have to day ben at your chirche at messe,  
And sayd a sermoun *after my simple wit*,  
Nought al *after the text of holy wryt*.  
For it is *hard* for yow, as I suppose,  
And therfor wil I teche yow ay the *glose*.  
*Glosyng is a ful glorious thing certayn*,  
*For letter sleth*, so as we clerkes sayn."

*Chaucer, Somp. Tale*, l. 80.

276. *byhyght*, promised.

280. *I madde*, I grow mad; cf. l. 41.

282. *good*, property, here and elsewhere.

283. *catell*, wealth.

285. The spellings *vsun*, *vsune*, *vson* are all bad.

287. "Do naught but proffer them privately a penny for saying a mass, and put out my eye *if his lad is not ready to take it*." The reading of the old printed copy, "but his name be *Prest*," i. e. *if his name be not Priest*, is very absurd. The *lkaue* or lad is the man who followed the begging friars about to carry their earnings.

"A stourdy harlot (*fellow*) ay went hem byhynde,  
That was her hostis man, and bar a sak,

And what men yaf hem, layd it on his bak."

*Sompnoure's Tale*, l. 46.

291. "As towching our habite and clothinge, yt is ordeyned that the breddithe of the hode pas not the sholder-boone, and that the lenghte therof pas not the coorde behinde; and the lenghte of the habit shalle nat pas the lenkithe of hym that werethe yt, and the breddith therof haue nat past xvi. spannyes at the most, nor les then xiiij., but-yf the gretnes of the brodre require more after the mynd of the warden, and the lenghte of the slevis shall cum over the vtter joynt of the finger and no further. And the brethern may haue mantellis of vyle and course clothe, not curiously made or pynched aboute the necke, nat towching the graund by a hole spanne." General Statutes of the Gray Friars; Mon. Francisc. p. 575. For pictures of the friars' dresses see Dugdale's *Monasticon*, last edition.

292. "More cloth is folded in cutting his cope than was in St Francis's frock, when he first established the order."

296. The *cote*, worn under the *cope*, was of fur; but it was cut short at the knee, and craftily buttoned close, lest it should be perceived by the stricter brethren.

298. Among the "articles that Pope Clement saithe that the Bretherne [Franciscans] be bownde to kepe vnder payne of dedly synne," the second is, "that the bretherne shalle were no shone."—*Mon. Franc.*, p. 572. At p. 28 of *Mon. Franc.* there is a story of one Walter de Madele, a Franciscan of Oxford, who found a pair of shoes and went to matins in them; he dreamt the next night that he was attacked by thieves, and putting out his feet to *show that he was a friar*, found to his confusion that he was shod. Starting up from bed, he throws his shoes out of the window.

299. *for bleynyng*, to prevent blains on their heels.

300. *yhamled*, cut short at the ancle, so that people should not easily see that they had hose on; such was their crafty device.

301. "And spices scattered loose in their purses (bags), to give away where they liked." Compare

"And also many a dyuers spyse  
In bagges about thai bere.  
Al that for women is plesand,  
Ful redy certes have thai;  
But lytel gyfe thai the husband,  
That for al shal pay."—*Pol. Poems*, i. 265

The friars used to bribe the fair wives, to get their good word, thus "throwing away a sprat to catch a whale." See Chaucer, *Prol.* 233; *Somp. Tale*, 94—101.

303. *knewen men*, if men knew; cf. l. 770. The old reading, *knownen*, is clearly wrong.

304. *nought but*, only; cf. prov. Eng. *nobbut*.

308. *heremita*, not *heremite*, is the true reading; it is a quotation from *Piers Plowman* (ed. Wright, p. 312);

“Poul *primus heremita*  
Hadde parroked hymselfe,” &c.

For the story of Paul of Thebes who, during the persecution under Decius, fled to a desert on the East of the Nile, and there became the founder of the anchorites or solitary hermits, see Mrs Jameson's *Sacred and Legendary Art*, vol. II. p. 368.

311. *Forto*, until. The Carmelites lived as hermits till the Franciscans betook themselves to the poor suburbs of towns; so says their apologist.

324. The alliteration is very defective; it is perhaps eked out by a very strong emphasis on *thou* and *thiselfe*.

326. “Thou shalt (at the next meeting of the chapter) have a letter of fraternization granted you, duly sealed.” Massingberd says (p. 118) —“Another marvellous way, by which the rich were brought in to share all the graces of poverty, without practising its privations, was by *conventual letters*, or charters of fraternization; by which the person presented with them was entitled to all the benefit of the prayers, masses, and meritorious deeds of the order.” Compare

“Ye sayn me thus, *how that I am your brother* :  
Ye, certes, (quod the frere), trusteth wel ;  
I toke our dame the *letter*, under our *sel*.”

*Somp. Tale*, l. 426.

328. *prounciall*, one who has the direction of the several convents of a *province*.

336. *preyinge of synne*, sinful praying.

341. A omits *s* in *aisliche*; but the reading of B (*aillich*) shews that the original had *aifliche*, *f* being again confused with *l*, as at l. 100.

342. *on leuest*, believest in.

345. *halt*, holdeth; so we find *rit* for rideth, *fynt* for findeth, &c.

347. *letten but werken*, prevent him from working.

350. *For thei ben*, whether they be; *on to trosten*, to trust in.

351. “I would requite thee with thy reward, according to my power.”

355. “They are as disdainful as Lucifer, that (for his pride) falls from heaven.” Perhaps we should read *droppede*.

356. “With their hearts (full) of haughtiness, (see) how they hallow churches, and deal in divinity as dogs treat bones.”

358. “He had i-made many a fair *mariage*.” *Chaucer, Prol.* l. 212.

360. In the Complaint of the Ploughman, it is said of the Pope that

“He maketh bishops for *earthly thanke*,  
And no thing at all for Christ[e]s sake.”

*Pol. Poems*, vol. i. p. 315.

The context shews that *earthly thanke* means a *bribe*.

361. “They wish for honours:—only look at their deeds (and you'll see proofs of it).”

362. I have no doubt, from the context, that these goings-on of the

friars at Hertford mean that they cajoled Richard II. and his relatives into granting them money. There was no house of the Black Friars at Hertford itself (there was one of Black *Monks*), but the allusion is doubtless to their famous convent at King's Langley, in Hertfordshire, the richest (says Dugdale) in all England. Richard II. made no less than three grants to it, and it received large sums from Edmund de Langley (who was born in that town), and from Edmund's first wife. "And 'tis said that this great Lady, having been somewhat wanton in her younger years, became an hearty Penitent, and departed this life anno 1394. 17 R. II. and was buried in this church" (the church of the Black Friars' convent); *Chauncy's Hertfordsh.*, p. 545. Edmund de Langley was also buried here, and so was the king himself. The custom was, to bequeath one's body to a convent for burial, and to bequeath a large sum of money to it at the same time; see ll. 408—417. It should be noted, too, that Richard often held a royal Christmas at Langley; he did so certainly in 1392, and again in 1394; see Stow's and Capgrave's Chronicles. This, doubtless, gave the Friars excellent opportunities.

365. See Glossary, s. v. Clawep.

366. "God grant they lead them well, in heavenly living, and cajole them not for their own advantage, to the peril of their (the kings') souls."

374. *lefte*, remained.

375. *digne*, disdainful; hence, repulsive; but there is not often much logical sequence or connection in proverbs of this sort. Yet that this is the right explanation is evident from Chaucer; see the Glossary.

378. *Als as*, all so as, i. e. just as if.

379. *leesinges lyeth*, lie their lies.

383. See note to l. 29. The friar in the Sompnoures Tale seems to have been a Carmelite; see Somp. T. l. 416.

387. *by lybbeth*, live by.

388. "We know of no subtlety, Christ knows the truth."

393. *And*, if.

401. *to wynnen withe my fode*, to earn my food with.

402. *lerne*, teach; common in prov. English.

405. *Catus amat pisces, sed non vult tingere plantam.*

406. *so—parted*, are not given away in that manner.

409. Carefully compare the death-bed scene described fully in Massingberd's Eng. Ref. pp. 165—168; and see also Chaucer's Sompnoures Tale.

"Si dives in patria quisquis infirmetur,  
Illuc frater properans et currens monetur;  
Et statim cum venerit infirmo loquetur,  
Ut cadaver mortuum fratribus donetur."

*Pol. Poems*, vol. i. p. 257.

414. *Anuell*; see Glossary.

415. "It is God's forbidding but that she die while she is in a mind to share her wealth among us; God let her live no longer, for our letters (of confraternity) are so numerous." It was of course inconvenient that those who had obtained these letters should live long afterwards.

421. "I saw a simple man hang upon (bend over) his plough."

I here venture to quote the *whole* of the *Prologue* to the *Ploughman's Tale*, from an early undated edition. It is much to the point, and was omitted by Mr Wright when reprinting the *Plowman's Tale* itself.

"Here endeth the Manciples tale, and here beginneth the Plowman's Prologue.

The Plowman plucked vp his plowe  
 Whan Midsomer Moone was comen in,  
 And saied his bestes shuld eate inowe,  
 And lige in the Grasse vp to the chin.  
 Thei been feble bothe Oxe and Cowe,  
 Of hem nis left but bone and skinne,  
 He shoke of her shere and coulter ofdrowe,  
 And honged his harnis on a pinne.

He toke his tabarde and his staffe eke,  
 And on his hedde he set his hat,  
 And saied he would saint Thomas seke,  
 On pilgremage he goth forth plat.  
 In scrippe he bare bothe bread and lekes,  
 He was forswonke and all forswat ;  
 Men miht haue sen through both his chekes,  
 And euery wang-toth and where it sat.

Our hoste behelde well all about,  
 And sawe this men was Sunne ibrent,  
 He knewe well by his senged snout,  
 And by his clothes that were to-rent,  
 He was a man wont to walke about,  
 He nas not alwaie in cloister ipent ;  
 He could not religiousliche lout,  
 And therefore was he fully shent.

Our hoste him axed, 'what man art thou ?'  
 'Sir' (*quod* he) 'I am an hine ;  
 For I am wont to go to the plow,  
 And earne my meate er ' that I dine ;  
 To swette and swinke I make auowe,  
 My wife and children therewith to finde ;  
 And serue God and I wist how,  
 But we leude men been full blinde.

For clerkes saie we shullen be fain  
 For her liuelod swette and swinke,  
 And thei right nought vs giue again,  
 Neither to eate ne yet to drinke.

<sup>1</sup> Old copy, "yer."

Thei mowe by lawe, as thei sain,  
 Vs curse and dampne to hell[e] brinke;  
 Thus thei putten vs to pain  
 With candles queint and belles clinke.

Thei make vs thralles at her lust,  
 And sain we mowe not els be saued;  
 Thei haue the corne and we the dust,  
 Who speaketh there-again, thei saie he raued.  
 [Four lines lost.]

'What? man,' (*quod* our hoste) 'canst thou preache?  
 Come nere and tel vs some holy thing.'  
 'Sir,' *quod* he, 'I heard ones teache  
 A priest in pulpit a good preaching.'  
 'Saie one,' *quod* our hoste, 'I thee beseche.'  
 'Sir, I am redy at your bidding;  
 I praie you that no man me reproche,  
 While that I am my tale telling.'

Thus endeth the Prologue, and here foloweth the first parte of the tale."

425. It means that his shoes were so worn and ill-made that, whilst his toes peeped out, his hose overhung his gaiters (*hokschyne* = *hoskins*), and so got bedaubed with mud. See *Hoeshins* in Jamieson.

428. *as mete*, as tight, or scanty, as the shoes were. It is the A.S. *māte*, middling, mean. It being a hard word, the scribe of MS. B erased it, and the old printer misprinted it.

431. *worthen*, become. The wrong reading *worthi* may have been an error in the old original text, from which texts A, B, and C are all derived. In Layamon's "Brut" the past participle of the verb *worthen*, to become, takes the forms *iwurðen*, *iwurden*, *iworðen*, *iworþe*; and is sometimes used in the exact sense here required, as in—"for alle ure heðene-scipe hæne is iwurðen"—"for all our heathendom is become base."—*Layamon*, vol. 2, p. 279.

432. *reufull*, sorry-looking; a great improvement on the old reading *rentfull*.

436. Compare—"As two of them [Minorites] were going into a neighbouring wood, picking their way along the rugged path over the frozen mud and rigid snow, whilst the blood lay in the track of their naked feet without their perceiving it," &c.—*Mon. Franc.* p. 632.

437. *laye*; the old printed text has *lath*; this is because the printer misread *laye* as *lape*.

443. "At heiz prime perkyn · lette þe plouz stonde."—*Piers Pl.* A. vii. 105.

445. "If livelihood (i. e. means of living) fail thee, I will lend thee such wealth as God hath sent; come, dear brother." *Go we* (= come along) was a common exclamation; cf. "go we dyne, gowe," *Piers Pl.* A. *prol.* 105.

452. "For there I expected to have known (it)."

456. "Attendite a falsis prophetis, qui veniunt ad vos *in vestimentis ovium*, intrinsecus autem sunt lupi rapaces." Mat. vii. 15 (Vulgate).

459. *werwolves*, lit. man-wolves, Fr. *loup-garous*, from the Teutonic *wer*, a man, which was modified into *gar* in Norman-French. For a full discussion of the etymology, see Glossary to Sir F. Madden's edition of "William and the Werwolf," a re-issue of which I am now preparing for the E. E. T. S. For a full discussion of the very prevalent mediæval superstition, that men could be turned into peculiarly ferocious wolves, see "A Book on Werwolves," by S. Baring Gould, and Thorpe's Northern Mythology.

462. *Curates*, parish-priests with a cure of souls. The friars were continually interfering with and opposing them.

"———unnethe may prestes seculers  
Gete any service, for thes frers," &c.

*Pol. Poems*, i. 267.

468. *confessions*, i. e. the right of hearing confessions, and being paid for so doing.

469. *sepultures*, burials. They used to get people to order in their wills that they should be buried in a convent-church, and then they would be paid for the singing of masses for them.

471. *he lokoth*, they look for, look out for.

477. "I trow that some wicked wight wrought these orders through the subtlety of the tale called Goliath; or else it was Satan," &c. A satire on the monkish orders, called *Apocalypsis Goliae*, may be found among the poems by Walter Mapes, &c., edited by Mr Wright for the Camden Society. The idea expressed in l. 479 is this:—perhaps, after all, that satire of Goliath was written as an artful contrivance for bringing about the disrepute of the monks, and the rise of the mendicant orders. It is certain that the friars succeeded at first because the monks had become so dissolute, but it is not likely that this particular poem had much to do with it. *Gleym* = bird-lime, and hence subtlety, craft, guile. It is a strong metaphor, but explained by our author's own words in l. 564; "I liken it to a limed twig, to draw men to hell."

486. Cain's name was generally spelt *Caim* or *Caym* in Early English: whence Wycliffe declared that the letters C, A, I, M meant the Carmelites, Augustines, Jacobins, and Minorites, and he delighted in calling the convents "Caim's castles," an idea which appears below, at l. 559. It was common to call wicked people Cain's children or Judas's children; see *Piers Pl. A. prol.* 35, and x. 149.

"Nou se the sothe whedre it be swa,  
That frere Carmes come of a K,  
The frer Austynes come of A,  
Frer Jacobynes of I,  
Of M comen the frer Menours;  
Thus grounded *Caym* thes four ordours

That fillen the world ful of errors,  
And of ypocrisy."—*Pol. Poems*, i. 266.

487. The Wycliffites were never tired of comparing the friars to *Pharisees*; ll. 487—502 and 546—584 are entirely devoted to this comparison. This comparison, and the one in l. 456, are both found in the Apology attributed to Wycliffe. *feyned for gode*, feigned to be good men. The old printed text has "Sarysenes, feyned for God."

489. *kynde ypocrites*, natural hypocrites, hypocrites by nature.

492. *wo worthe you*, wo happen to you; *worthe* is the imperative of *wurthen*, to become, to happen.

498. Cf. note to l. 574.

499. Cf. note to l. 554.

503. "Her (*their*) high maister is Beliall."—*Pol. Poems*, i. 310.

507. Cf. note to l. 462.

510. The old reading *derulich*, secretly, gives no sense; *deruelich* means laboriously, industriously. Thus in Allit. Poems (ed. Morris, E. E. T. S.), p. 56, l. 632, Abraham tells his servant to seethe a kid, "And he *deruely*, at his dome, dyzt hyt bylyue;" and he industriously, at his bidding, got it ready soon.

516. *vtyned*, bad spelling for *vtyned*, unfastened. It occurs in this sense in the following: "næs þær duru *ontyned*, ne weall to-slyten, ne eah-þyrl geopened;" there was no door *unfastened*, nor wall rent through, nor window opened. MS. C.C.C. 196, p. 43

518. *bare*, barren.

521. *pouere in gost*, poor in spirit. "Gostly pouert is sum tyme wan a thing hath litil of sum spirit; and thus was Crist most pore, for he had lest of the spirit of prid."—*Apology attributed to Wycliffe*, p. 41; cf. *Somnours Tale*, l. 215.

523. *Proue hem*, i. e. try the experiment of proving them.

528. For a brief summary of Wycliffe's charges against the friars, see Massingberd, *Eng. Ref.*, p. 139; or consult Lewis's or Le Bas' life of Wycliffe; or, better still, Wycliffe's own *Two treatises against the Friars*, edited by James; 4to, Oxford, 1608. He died Dec. 31, 1384, at Lutterworth.

532. To *lolle* properly means, to profess the doctrines of Wycliffe; and "oueral *lollede* him" = especially accused him of *lolling*. See the poem against the Lollards, in *Pol. Poems*, ii. 245, where we find

"And, parde, *lolle* thei never so longe,  
Yut wol lawe make hem lowte;"

and again, "double dethe for suyche *lollynge*." A *loller* means a slug-gard, an idle vagabond; see Piers Plowman (ed. Wright), pp. 514, 527. In the Complaint of the Ploughman the term is applied, not to the *Wycliffites*, but to the *friars*, who are "Icleped *lollers* and londlese;" *Pol. Poems*, i. 305. At the same time, the term *Lollard* was freely applied to the so-called heretics, and had been used in Germany as early as 1309. The latter word was probably formed from Ger. *lullen* or



*lullen*, to stammer, mumble (Ducange gives "Lollaerd, *muſſitator*," ) but the two words *loller* and *Lollard* were *purposely* confused, to the no small perplexity of modern inquirers.

536. "If you can find four friars in one convent that follow that rule, why, then, I've lost all my powers of tastiſg, touching, and testiſg."

538—545. In *all* former editions, these lines have been rendered mere nonsense by the absurd insertion of a full stop at the end of l. 543. But the construction is just the same as in ll. 536-7; and the sentence is framed in the same ironical strain. It means, "Only find fault with them ever so little, and blame their mode of life, and if he does not leap up on high in hardness of heart, and at once call you a thing of naught, and revile your name openly with proud words that transgress his rule, both with 'thou liest' and again 'thou liest,' in his haughtiness of soul, and turn about like a tyrant that torments himself—if he does not do this, why then I'll admit that a lord is more loath to give to a knave than to such a begging friar as he is, though he be the best in the town." In other words, "we know that a lord would rather give to a knave than to a friar; but, if my words be not true, consider the order of all things as inverted, and that a lord is *more loath* to give to a knave than to a friar." Such a construction is difficult to explain on paper, but a good reader would bring out the force of it easily enough.

550. *chapolories*, scapulars. The writer cleverly substitutes the *scapulars* of the friars for the *phylacteries* of the Pharisees. The scapular (Fr. *scapulaire*, Ital. *scapulare*) was so called because thrown over the *shoulders*. Compare the words of Jack Upland—"What betokeneth your great hood, your *scaplerie*, your knotted girdle, and your wide cope?"—*Pol. Poems*, ii. 19. This word has been queerly misunderstood; Richardson thought it meant a *chapeltry*, and inserted this line in his dictionary under "Chapel." But the spellings *scaplory* and *scapulary* are both given in the Promptorium Parvulorum, and the alteration into *chapolory* is less remarkable than the spelling of *chaff* in l. 663, viz. *schaf*; and see note to l. 684.

554. Compare

"Priestes should for no catell plede,  
But chasten hem in charitè;  
Ne to no bataille should men lede,  
For inhaunsing of her own degree;  
Nat wilue sittings in high see,  
Ne soueraignty in house ne hall;  
All wordly worship defie and flee;  
For who willeth highnes, foule shal fall."

*Ploughman's Complaint*, *Pol. Poems*, i. 306.

559. See note to l. 486.

564. So in *Piers Plowman* (ed. Wright), p. 170—"For lecherie in *likynge* is lyme-yerd of helle."

569. *her propre*, their own.

571. "Except money may make measure of (i. e. may moderate) the

pain, according as his power of payment is,—his penance shall fail; and God grant it be a *good* help (i. e. a *heavy* payment) for the health of the souls."

574. "Now *maister* (quod this lord) I yow biseke.—

No *maister*, sir (quod he) but servitour,  
Though I have had in scole such honour.

God likith not that *Raby* men us calle

Neyther in market, neyther in your large halle."

*Somymoures Tale*, l. 484.

So too in the Comp. of the Ploughman; Pol. Poems, i. 337.

577. The sense is carried on from *forzotten this* to *Wher* in l. 579. "Friars have forgotten this, viz. whether Francis," &c.

583. *and—liste*, and choose when it suits him; meaning, I suppose, that he chooses his own hours for service, &c.

586. "He touches not the text itself, but takes it to found his glosses on."

591. *Stumlen in tales*, flounder about in his legends of the saints, instead of preaching God's word.

593. "And look out (find out) for themselves lying stories, such as please the people."

597. *a lymitor*; see Chaucer, Prol. l. 209. "It was, of course, however, necessary to regulate the system of begging alms. . . . This was effected by assigning districts to each convent, within which its members were to take their rounds, and generally each individual friar had his own limits prescribed; whence the name that was commonly given to them of *limitors*. When the system was established, the alms of bread, bacon, and cheese, logs of wood for their fire, and other ordinary gifts, were ready for the friar when he called." *Mussingberd, Eng. Ref.* p. 110.

603. *Wherto*, wherefore, answering to *But for* in l. 605.

608. The old printer, misreading Y as þ, and supposing þ to stand for þe or þei, turned *Y-cloped* into *Thei clothed*.

610. *onlie*, singularly, in a way peculiar to themselves, "neither in order nor out," as we read in l. 45; cf. also l. 534.

613. *for*, before.

614. *clap*, cloth. The adjective *pur*, pure, clean, shews that *cloth* is meant; besides, they would not be put in *clay* when "near dead," but only after death. The mis-reading *clay* in A is easily explained; the writer simply mistook þ to mean y, just as, by a common blunder, y<sup>e</sup> and y<sup>t</sup> occur often in C for *the* and *that*. The reading *cleye* in B is due to the same thing, only that here the scribe also changed the spelling at his own good pleasure, as he has very unwisely done throughout the MS. The announcement in this line that friars, when near dead, were wrapped up in white cloth, and had *pots put on their heads*, is strange and startling, and a reference to l. 627 seems to shew that there existed a system of disposing of useless friars by a process not very different from suffocation; but it would be desirable to have more light thrown upon this passage from other sources. A request for further explanation was

inserted in Notes and Queries, 3rd S. xi. p. 277, but has elicited, as yet, no reply.

623. "Or maimed by accident, or sick lepers." The old text has *mayned* for *maymed*, and *lyke* for *syke*, a mistake due to reading the long *s* (*f*) as an *l*, as in ll. 100, 233, and 341.

626. "Except he beg his bread, his bed is got ready for him; he shall be put under a pot in a secret chamber so that he shall not live or last long after." Cf. ll. 614, 732.

631. "But whosoever hath scoffed at a friar," &c.

633. "It were as good for him to have displeased a wealthy lord."

635. *compased his morthor*, contrived his murder; the old printed text has *mother*; had the author meant *mother*, he would have written *moder*; see l. 2.

636. "Than if he had bestowed a buffet on a begging friar."

641. *this*, this law; *an other*, another law.

642. "That which they catch hold of, they hold tight, [and] soon hide it away."

643, 644. Difficult; but the meaning seems to be—"Their hearts are fully hid (from the world's wealth) in their high cloisters—quite as much as curs abstain from refuse carrion!" In other words, they *no more* devote their minds to contemplation and abstain from coveting, than a dog abstains from carrion.

648, 649. The reading *wilfuller* (of MS. B) gives the right sense; the readings *wilfullok(e)r* and *folloke* are easily accounted for by remembering that the old spelling of *wilfuller* would be *wilfulloker*, just as *lightloker* (= *lightlier*), *sadloker* (= *sadder*), and many other such comparative forms, occur continually in old authors, as, e. g. in *Piers Plowman*. The *wil* was dropped in the old printed text because the *repetition* of it looked wrong, and the final *r*, which may have been obscurely written, went with it. The sense is; "just test their soberness, and you may soon know that no wasp in the world will sting more fiercely, [than they will sting you] for stepping on the toe of a stinking friar." But there is probably a line lost between ll. 648 and 649.

655. *pursut of*, prosecution (of heretics) by.

657. *Wat* is no doubt the right reading; the reading *Water* arose from adding *er*, and forgetting to put in the *l*. *Wat* is the common form, and was a very common name; cf. *Piers Plowman*, A. v. 30. Walter Brute was a Welsh gentleman, who called into question the doctrines of the power of the keys, auricular confession, pardons, &c., and declared that pretended miracles ought to be carefully examined into. In particular he protested, Oct. 15, 1391, against the condemnation, for heresy, of William Swinderby; on Jan. 19, 1391-2, he confessed to having communicated with the said heretic; on Friday, Oct. 3, 1393, he appeared before the bishop of Hereford, who had prosecuted him unceasingly, for final trial, and on the succeeding Monday, Oct. 6, he submitted himself to the same, not without having well defended many of his opinions. A long account of his defence will be found in Foxe's *Acts and Monuments*,

vol. 3, pp. 131—188 (ed. Cattle, 1841). Fuller speaks of Walter Brute as one of the "Worthies of Wales."

659. I venture to read *hym*, as the sense requires; *hem* must have been copied from the line above. Brute having submitted himself to the bishop, the friars partly failed in their object; but they still tell men, says our author, that he is a heretick, and go on preaching against him. This use of the present tense helps greatly to fix the date of the poem in 1394. Compare the account of William Swinderby in Massingberd's Eng. Ref. p. 172.

660. Compare

"Whoso speketh ayenst her powere,  
It shal be holden heresie."

*Compl. Ploughm., Pol. Poems, i. 329.*

663. Imitated from Piers Plowman, A. i. 167,

"Chewen heore *charite*, and chiden after more!"

So here, "They gobble down their charity as hounds do bran," and no more is seen of it. *Schaf*, chaff; prob. put for *bran*, with which dogs used to be commonly fed. Notes and Queries, 3rd S. xi. 191.

664. *passen pursutes*, exceed all other persecutions, i. e. they both wish to murder men's souls after burning their bodies, and they would do it too! A Wicliffite is threatened with the words,

† Thou shalt be brent in balefull fire,  
And all thy sect I shall destrie."—*Pol. Poems, i. 341.*

Men were sometimes burnt for heresy before the year 1401. See Wyclif's Works, ed. Arnold, i. x.

670. "They nold nat demen after the face."—*Compl. Ploughm., Pol. Poems, i. 325.*

681. "*Possessioneres*, i. e. the regular orders of *monks*, who possessed landed property and enjoyed rich revenues. The *friars* were forbidden by their rule to possess property, which they only did under false pretences; they depended for support on voluntary offerings."—*Cunt. Tales*, ed. Wright, p. 82, *foot-note*.

"Suche annuels has made thes frers  
So wely and so gay,  
That ther may no *possessioners*  
Mayntene thair array."—*Pol. Poems, i. 267.*

684. I venture to read *chesen*. The original text probably had *schesen*, altered in MS. A to *schosen*. The strange spelling *schesen* is paralleled by *schaf* for *chaf*, and *chuldest* for *schuldest* in l. 124.

691. *Aldermen*, an allusion to the twenty-four elders, Rev. iv. 4; we read "et mittebant coronas suas ante thronum" in ver. 10 (Vulgate).

695. Alluding to the dress of the Dominicans; see note to l. 29.

703. "I suppose this refers to St Hildegardis, a nun who flourished in the middle of the twelfth century, and who was celebrated among the Roman Catholics as a prophetess. Her prophecies are not uncommon in manuscripts, and they have been printed. Those which relate to the

future corruptions in the monkish orders are given in Foxe's Acts and Monuments, book vi., and in other works."—Mr Wright's note to this line. St Hildegarde was abbess of St Rupert's mount, near Bingen; born A.D. 1098, died in 1180. See Neander's Church History, vii. 291-5 (ed. Torrey).

705. Cf. note to l. 468. Innocent III. made confession compulsory, once a year at least.

710. *after used*, (perhaps) used after, i. e. followed after, held to, practised accordingly. But it is an awkward expression.

713. So in Piers Plowman, A. viii. 3, "And purchasede him a pardoun *A pena et a culpa*." Such was the usual phrase.

716. "And they deal with loans and biddings;" see Gloss. s. v. *lone* and *bode*.

719. Alludes to the Franciscans; gray was the original colour of their habit, but after a time dark-brown was introduced. "On St George's day, 1502, they relinquished the *London russet* which they had for some time worn, and resumed the undyed white-grey which had been their original habit."—*Greyfriar's Chronicle*, Pref., p. xiv.

724. *biggen* may either mean *buy*, or *construct*.

725. *And als*, and according as.

729. *furste-froyt*, first-fruits. Cf. Sompnoures Tale, l. 577.

738. *scon*, better spelt *schon*, shoes. The old text has *stone*! *Sc* and *St* are often hardly distinguishable in MSS.

744. 'Now must each cobbler set his son to school.'

748. *bychop*, bishop. The alliteration requires this word, but the old printed text has *abbot*. Such an alteration must have been made by the printer of *set purpose*. Compare

"For to lords they woll be liche,  
An harlots sonne not worth an hawe!"  
*Pol. Poems*, i. 312.

750. Compare

"Lords also mote to them loute," &c.  
*Pol. Poems*, i. 308.

758. *faytours*. Mr Wright's edition has *forytours*, which he supposes a mistake in the old text. But *forytours* is an error of his printer, for all three of the other editions have *faytours*, as in the MSS.

761. "No one could sit down to meat, high or low, but he must ask a friar or two, who when they came would play the host to themselves, and carry away bread and meat besides."—*qu. in Massingberd*, *Eng. Ref.*, p. 110.

763. *randes*, strips, slices. The old text has *bandes*. This improves the alliteration, but it does not appear that there is any such word. See Glossary.

764. Compare

"With chaunge of many manner meates,  
With song and solas sitting long," &c.  
*Pol. Poems*, i. 307.

769. "Fitzralph, in his *Apology at Avignon*, accused them of 'philosophising' in the chambers of the most beautiful maidens; and Eccleston says, that even so early as his time, Friar Walter of Reigate confessed that these familiarities were one of the ways by which the foul fiend vexed the order."—*Massingberd, Eng. Ref.*, p. 110. Cf. *Piers Plowman* (ed. Wright), p. 445. And the following—

"Iche man that here shal lede his life,  
That has a faire doghter or a wyfe,  
Be-war that no frer ham shryfe,  
Nauther loud nor stille."—*Pol. Poems*, i. 265.

771. *homly*, familiarly. Mr Wright has *holy*.

777. *Helye*, Elias.

782. "have laid it in water," i. e. drowned it, sunk it. *Hire* is used because *rewle* is feminine.

784. *Ne were*, If it were not for.

785. Compare

"Had they been out of religion,  
They must have hanged at the plowe,  
Threshing and diking fro toun to toun  
With sorrie meat, and not halfe yuowe."  
*Pol. Poems*, i. 335.

808. When Christ descended into hell, he fetched out Adam and the patriarchs, and led them with him to heaven. This was called the Harrowing of Hell; the story is given in the apocryphal gospel of Nicodemus, and is repeated at great length in *Piers Plowman*.

810. *steiz*, ascended.

816. *generall*, i. e. Catholic, universal. So in p. 1 of the *Apology* attributed to Wycliffe, we find the "*general feith*," meaning the Catholic faith.

817—821. These five lines are *certainly spurious*. They are in neither of the MSS., and are found only in the old printed copy. The reason for inserting them was a wish to conceal the fact that five lines had been *suppressed* which are found in *both* the MSS.; viz., ll. 822, 823, and 828—830, and which are now printed *for the first time*. The reason for suppressing them was that they appear to contain the doctrine of transubstantiation, and as the object of printing the book at all was to attack the Romish party, it would never have done to retain these lines. Hence ll. 817—821 were forged; but the forger of them, though he has given us five lines which imitate the author's style very ingeniously, did not truly understand the laws of alliterative verse, and formed ll. 817—819 on a wrong principle, putting *two* of the rime-letters into the *second* half of the line, and only *one* into the *first* half, whereas the usual practice is the contrary to this. True, lines of this type *do* occur, as e. g. at l. 26, but they are very rare, and only admissible as a variation. To allow *three* such lines to follow each other is against all ordinary usage. But this is not the only difficulty. There is really *no place* where ll. 817—

821 can properly come in. To insert them where I have done involves the absurdity of putting *Amen* in the middle of a sentence; whilst to insert them any where else only makes matters still worse. Again, the suppression of the genuine lines rendered ll. 824—827 and ll. 831—839 meaningless, and I will venture to say that no one has hitherto been able to make out to what they can possibly refer. But the mystery is now cleared up; they discuss the doctrine of *transubstantiation*.

822. "And I believe in the sacrament too, that the very God is in both flesh and blood fully, who suffered death for us." *Sacremens* (MS. A) should be *sacrament*, as in MS. B. *On* = upon, in; A.S. *on*. Cf. the phrases *leuest on*, believest in, l. 342; *leue on*, believe in, l. 795. The word *in* in l. 815 is exactly equivalent to the word *on* in l. 799.

825. *deyte*, divinity, divine presence. MS. B has *diet*. Supposing the author of the *Crede* to have written the *Complaint of the Ploughman*, we find his views expressed thus:—

"On our Lords body I doe not lie,  
I say sooth through true rede,  
His flesh and blood through his misterie  
Is there, in the forme of brede :

How it is there it needeth not strive,  
Whether it be subget or accident,  
But as Christ was when he was on-live,  
So is he there verament."—*Pol. Poems*, i. 341.

Such was the position of the Wycliffites. They denied the *extreme* form of the doctrine as declared by the friars, maintaining that whilst Christ was *bodily* present, the bread *never ceased to remain bread*; how this could be was a thing, they said, not to be explained. See Wycliffe's "Wicket."

847. The *Complaint of the Ploughman* ends in a very similar manner; the author even introduces the same word *avow* = guarantee, hold to.

"Witeth the pellican and not me,  
For hereof I will not *avow* ;  
In high ne in low, ne in no degree,  
But as a fable take it ye mowe.  
To holy church I will me bow  
Ech man to *amend him* Christ send space ;  
And for my writing me allow  
He that is almighty for his grace."

*Pol. Poems*, i. 346.

## GLOSSARIAL INDEX.

[*Abbreviations.* Prompt. Parv. = Promptorium Parvulorum (Camden Society); Cot. = Cotgrave's French Dictionary (1660); Glos. of Arch. = Glossary of Architecture; Piers Pl. = Piers Plowman (E. E. T. S., 1867); O. Fr. = Roquefort's Glossary of Old French; O.N. = Old Norse; &c.]

- A-cast, cast off, cast away, 99.  
 Aferd, afraid, 130.  
 After þat, according as, 731, 732, 733.  
 A-gon, gone, spent, 624.  
 Aisliche, timorously, 341. Cf. Azlez = Azles, fearless; *Garcayn*, l. 2335; Aghlich = fearful, *do.* l. 136. A.S. *egeslice*.  
 Alabaustre, alabaster, 183.  
 Aldermen, elders, 691. See Rev. 4. 4.  
 Aloute, bow down, 750.  
 Als as, just as if (*contr. from* all-so-as), 378.  
 And, if, 393. And if (= an if), if, 17.  
 Angerlich, angrily, 263.  
 Anuell, a mass to be said annually; here, the money that pays for such a mass, 414.  
 Apert, open, plain; (or it may be an adv., openly, plainly), 541.  
 Asay, test; asay of, make trial of, 647.  
 Asaye, try (it), 247.  
 Assaie, power of testing, discrimination, 537.  
 Aunter, adventure. An aunter zif = it is an adventure if, it is a chance if; 789.  
 Auntrede, adventured; auntrede me, adventured myself, 341.  
 Auowen, avouch, warrant, 847. "*Advouer*, to advow, avouch, approve, allow of, warrant, authorize, &c." Cotgrave.  
 Awaytede, perceived, beheld, 172. O. Fr. *agaiter*.  
 Awyrien, curse, 662. A.S. *awyrian*.  
 Azen, again, 137.  
 Babelyng, babbling, 551.  
 Bacbyten, to backbite, 139.  
 Bale, woe, 696. A.S. *bealu*.  
 Bale, a pile, 667. "*Bél* (1) a funeral pile; (2) a burning." Bosworth.  
 Baly, belly, 763.  
 Bayteþ, bait, feed; in bayteþ, feed in, rummage in for food, 375. Chaucer.  
 Bedden, to provide with a bed, 772.  
 Beden, to offer, bestow on, 636.  
 Bedes, prayers, 389.  
 Bedys, beads, 323.  
 Been, bees, 727. A.S. *béo*, pl. *béon*.  
 Belded, builded, built, 548.  
 Belden, build, 706.  
 Beldinge, Beldyng, building, 501, 548.  
 Beleve, belief, 31.  
 Belliche, beautifully, 173.  
 Benen, beans, 762.  
 Benison, blessing, 654.  
 Beouten, without, 651. A.S. *bútan*.  
 Bernes, barns, 595.  
 Beslombred (*or* Beslomered), beslobbered, bedaubed, 427.  
 Betauzte, commended; crist he me b., he commended me to Christ, 137. A.S. *betécuan*.  
 Beþ, are, 254, 546; be ye (*imp.*), 442.  
 Beuer, beaver, 295.



- Biclypped, embraced, covered, 227.  
 Biggeth, buy, 360. A.S. *bycgan*.  
 Bild, building, 157.  
 Biswynkeþ, labour for, get by labour, 722. A.S. *beswincan*.  
 Bleder, bladder, 222.  
 Bleynyng, blaining, 299.  
 Blisseþ, blesseth, 521.  
 Bode, an offer, proffer, bid, 716. See *Bode* in Jamieson. "Ye may yet war *bodes* or Beltan," ye may get worse offers ere Beltane-day (May 1); Ramsay's Scotch Prov. p. 83. Hence, to be at lone and bode = to deal with lendings and biddings, to lend and bid.  
 Bote, boot, remedy, 99, 335. A.S. *bót*.  
 Bragg, boastingly, 706.  
 Brenne, burn, 667.  
 Bretfull, quite full, 223. Swed. *brüdd*, brim; *brüldful*, brimful.  
 Broche, a brooch or jewel, 323. "*Broche*, juelle." Prompt. Parv.  
 Brol, child, brat, 745, 748. "þe leeste barn (*another reading*, bro) of his blod," &c. Piers Pl. A. iii. 198.  
 Buldeþ, build, 118.  
 Burw3, a castle or large edifice; here, a convent, 118.  
 But, except, 554, 626.  
 Byforne, before, formerly, 612.  
 Bybirneþ, hide up in a corner, conceal, 642. See *Hirnes*.  
 Byhyzt, promised, 276.  
 Byiapeþ, bejape, deceive, 46.  
 Byleue, belief, the Creed, 16.  
 Bysynesse, busy toil, industry, 727.  
 Bythenk, reflect, 130.  
 Bytokneþ, betokens, 694, 696.  
  
 Can, (I) know, 8.  
 Canstou, knowest thou, 99.  
 Carefull, full of care, miserable, 441.  
 Cary, the name of a very coarse material, 422. Cf. "I-cloped in a cauri-mauri." Piers Pl. A. v. 62.  
 Caste, planned, contrived, 486.  
 Casteþ, casts, i. e. contrives, plans; casteþ to-form = plans beforehand, 485. See *caste* in Prompt. Parv.  
 Catell, goods, property, wealth, 116, 146, 283. O. Fr. *catels*. Low Lat. *catallum*.  
 Cautel, trickery, cunning, 303. (). Fr. *cautelle*; see *Romans of Parthenay*, l. 5563.  
 Celle, cell, 739. "Applied sometimes to the small sleeping-rooms of the monastic establishments." Gloss. of Arch.  
 Chanons, canons, 674.  
 Chapaile, chapel, 119.  
 Chapolories, scapulars, 550. "Scaplorye (scapulary, scapular) *Scapulare*." Prompt. Parv. And see Fairholt's costume in England, p. 595. Explained by Mr Wright to mean *chapelaries*, which I do not understand.  
 Chaptire, i. e. meeting of the chapter, 327.  
 Chaptire-hous, chapter-house, 199.  
 Chereliche, expensively, sumptuously, 582. Fr. *cher*.  
 Chesen, choose, 583; chesen hem to lustes, choose lusts, 684.  
 Cheuetyne, chieftain, lord, 582.  
 Childre, children, 756.  
 Chol, jowl; the part extending from ear to ear beneath the chin, 224. A.S. *ceola*.  
 Chymene, chimney, 583. "This term was not originally restricted to the shaft, but included the fire-place." Gloss. of Arch.  
 Chymneyes, chimnies, 209.  
 Claweþ, stroke down, smooth down, 365. "*Plateur*, a flatterer, glozer, fawner, soother, foister, smoother; *acławback*, sycophant, Pickthank." Cotgrave.  
 Clouted, patched, esp. used of strengthening a shoe with an iron plate, called in Norfolk a *cleat* or *clout*, 424.  
 Cloutes, clouts, patches, 244, 428; rags, tattered clothes, 438.  
 Cnaue, knave, lad, servant-man, 288.  
 Cnely, kneel (*infin.*), 124.  
 Cofren, to fasten up in a coffer or box, 68.  
 Cofres, coffers, boxes, 30.  
 Combren, 461, } to cumber, encumber;  
 Comeren, 765, } ber; to gorge, 765.  
 Compased, went about, contrived, 635.

- Conisantes, badges of distinction, 185.  
 Conne, know, learn, 101, 131, 234, 330, 395, 792; connen on, are acquainted with, 388. A.S. *cunnan*.  
 Cope, Copes; 126, 227, 292, 294, 724, 739.  
 Coruen, carved, 200.  
 Cotynge, cutting, 292.  
 Counfort, comfort, 99.  
 Coupe, could, 233.  
 Coupe, to make to know, to teach, tell, 17. A.S. *cýðun*.  
 Coupen, knew, 62. A.S. *cunnan*, pt. t. *ic cūðe*.  
 Crochettes, crockets, 174. "Crockets, projecting leaves, flowers, &c., used in Gothic architecture to decorate the angles of spires, canopies," &c. Gloss. of Arch. Du. *kroke*, a curl.  
 Crois, cross, 805.  
 Crombolle, crumbowl, prob. a large wooden bowl for broken scraps, &c., 437.  
 Cros, the cross, 1. See note.  
 Croukeþ, bend, bend down, 751.  
 Crucheþ, crouch, 751.  
 Curates, secular clergy who have *cure* of souls, 507.  
 Curious, dainty, 765.  
 Curry, rub down, stroke, 365. See *Curry* in Wedgwood's Etym. Dict.  
 Curteis, courteous, gracious, 1, 140, &c. O. Fr. *courtois*.  
 Curteysliche, courteously, graciously, 637.  
 Cuted, cut short, 296, 434. Cf. Burns's "*cutty sark*" in *Tum o' Shanter*.  
 Defended, forbade, 576, 587, 669.  
 Deme, judge, 524.  
 Demen, to judge, 670, 814. A.S. *déman*.  
 Demest, judgest, 152.  
 Departen, to share goods; wiþ vs to departen, to share her goods among us, 416.  
 Deruelich, laboriously, industriously, 510. A.S. *deorfun*, *derfan*, to labour. See note.  
 Destruede, destroyed, i. e. put aside, 147.  
 Destrueþ, destroy, 55.  
 Deyte, deity, 825.  
 Digne, dignified, haughty, disdainful (Chaucer), 355; disdainful, and hence repelling, repulsive, 375.  
 "Sche was as *deyne* as water in a dich,  
 As ful of hokir and of bissemare"; i. e. of frowardness and abusive speech. Chaucer, *Reeve's Tale*, 44.  
 Dissaueþ, deceiveth, 505.  
 Dortour, dormitory, 211.  
 Dotardes, dotards, 825.  
 Dranes, drones, 726. A.S. *drán*.  
 Dredles, doubtless, 524.  
 Dreccheþ, (*pl.*) vex, grieve, oppress, 464; (*sing.*) vexes, troubles, 504. A.S. *dreccan*.  
 Dued, endowed, endued with gifts, 776. Fr. *douer*.  
 Dygginge, digging, contriving, 504.  
 Egged, urged, 239. A.S. *eggian*, to incite.  
 Eize, eye, 141, 142, 145, 288; *pl.* eizen, eyne, eyes, 84.  
 Eked, eked out, 244.  
 Elles, else, otherwise, 738.  
 Encombren, encumber, 483.  
 Ender, *in phr.* this ender daie = this day past, yesterday, lately, 239. Stratmann cites the German *ender* = Lat. *prius*, and O.N. *endr* = Lat. *olim*. Cf. Gower, C.A. i. 45.  
 Enfourme, inform, 272.  
 Entayled, sculptured, carved, 167, 200. O. Fr. *entailler*.  
 Er, ere, 374.  
 Erberes, gardens, 166. O. Fr. *herbier*. Lat. *herbarium*. [Distinct from harbour, A.S. *hereberga*.]  
 Erst, first, 242.  
 Euelles, evilless, without guilt, 242. [Prob. corrupt.]  
 Euesed, surrounded by clipped borders, 166. A.S. *efesian*, to clip like the eaves of a house.  
 Even-forþ, straightway, directly onwards, 163.  
 Eye, an egg, 225. A.S. *æg*.  
 Face, appearance, 670.  
 Falshede, Falshed, falsehood, *laiseness*, 419, 682, 687.

- Falshedes, falsehoods, 616.  
 Faren, fare, go on, 775.  
 Fareþ, fare; fareþ wip, act with respect to, 728.  
 Fayntise, deceit, feigning, pretence, 251.  
 Faytours, traitors, deceivers, 758.  
   O. Fr. *faiturier*, a conjuror, from Lat. *factor*.  
 Fele, many, 547, 832; whou fele, how many, 522; so fele, so many men, 783; fele wise, many ways, 484.  
 Fen, muck, mire, 427, 429, 430. A.S. *fenn*.  
 Fend, fiend, 454, 460, 565, 577, 747; pl. fendes, fiends, 305.  
 Fer, far, 485.  
 Ferd, fared; i. e. went, 203.  
 Fermery, 212, }  
 Fermori, 701, } an infirmary. Cf.  
   *fermerere*, in Chaucer.  
 Ferrer, farther, 207.  
 Fet, fetched, 808.  
 Feyne, feign, 273.  
 Feyþ, faith, 19, 95.  
 Fitchewes, fitchets, i. e. fitchets' fur, 295. A *fitchet* is a kind of polecat. Fr. *fissau*. O. Du. *vissche*. Called in Shropshire a *fitchuk*. See King Lear, A. iv. sc. 6, l. 124.  
 Fluricheþ, flourishes, varies capriciously, 484. [The idea is taken from making flourishes in illuminated drawings; cf. "Floryschyn' bokys. *Floro*." Prompt. Parv.]  
 Fond, attempt, endeavour, try, 95. A.S. *сандian*.  
 Foned, tried, tested, 451.  
 Fonden, go, proceed, 338, 408. See *Lancelot of the Laik*.  
 Fonge, Fongen, to take, receive, get, catch, 146, 715; receive, take, get, 407, 786, 836. A.S. *fón*. Ger. *fangen*. Mæso-Goth. *fahan*.  
 For, used in the sense of whether, if, 350; before, 613; against, 299.  
 Forbode, 415. Godys forbode = it is God's prohibition, God forbids. "Forbedynge, or forbode, or forefendynge. *Prohibicio, Inhibicio*." Prompt. Parv.  
 Forboden, forbidden, 147, 769. A.S. *forbodan*, p.p. of vb. *forbeódan*.  
 For-deden, did to death, slew, murdered, 495. From the vb. *for-do*.  
 For-gabbed, scoffed at, 631. A.S. *gabban*, Swed. *begabba*.  
 Formfaderes, forefathers, 808. Cf. A.S. *forma*, former, early.  
 Forsoþe, for a truth, 148.  
 Forto, until, 311.  
 Forþan, for that (cause), on that account, 27. A.S. *forþan*.  
 For-werd, worn out, 429, 736. A.S. *forwered*.  
 Foundement, foundation, 250.  
 Foyns, martens, i. e. martens' fur, 295. "*Fouinne*, the Foine, wood-martin, or beech-martin." Cotgr.  
 Fraitur, 212, }  
 Fraitour, 701, } See Fraytour.  
 Frayne, to question, 153.  
 Fraynede, questioned, asked, 28.  
 Fraynen, question, inquire of, 338. A.S. *fregnun*. Ger. *fragen*.  
 Fraynyng, a questioning, inquiry, 27.  
 Fraytour, a refectory or dining-room, 203, 284. Also spelt Fraitur, Fraitour, Freitour.  
 Freitour, 220. See Fraytour.  
 Freren, of friars, 311.  
 Freten, devour, 722, 729. A.S. *fretan*.  
 Furrynge, furs, 604.  
 Furste-froyt, first-fruits, 729.  
 Fyeþ on, cry shame on, 616.  
 Gabbynge, lying, deceit, 275. "Gabbynge, or lesynge. *Menducium*." Prompt. Parv.  
 Gaped, stared, 156, 191. Ger. *gaffen*.  
 Garites, garrets, 214. See *Garyte* in Prompt. Parv.  
 Gaynage, profit, 197.  
 Generall, universal, catholic, 816.  
 Generallyche, universally, altogether, 575.  
 Gest, story, history, poem, 479. Lat. *gestum*. See note to Chaucer, l. 13775; ed. Tyrwhitt.  
 Gestes, stories, legends, 46.  
 Gilen, beguile, 599.  
 Gladding, pleasing, amusing, 515.  
 Glauerynge, deceiving, deceitful, flattering, 51, 708. N. Prov. Eng.

- glaiwer*, to talk foolishly; Welsh *glafaru*, to flatter.
- Glees, songs, 93.
- Gleyu, bird-lime; hence, subtlety, craft, 479. Cf. l. 564. "Gleyme. *Limus, gluten*." Prompt. Parv. Cf. Eng. *clammy*, prov. Eng. *clem*. See Wedgwood's Etym. Dict.
- Gloppyng, *sb.* a swallowing greedily, a gulping down, 92. "Gloffare, or devowrare." Prompt. Parv.
- Glose, *sb.* a gloss, a paraphrasing, a substitution of glosses for the text, 275, 515. See Prompt. Parv.
- Glose, *vb.* mislead, deceive, 367.
- Gloseþ, glosseth, explains away by glosses, 345, 585.
- Glosinge, paraphrasing, 709.
- G.ut, a glutton, 67. A.S. *gluto*.
- Godspell, gospel, 345; *pl.* Godspelles, Godspells, 257, 275, 709.
- Goldbeten, adorned with beaten gold, 188.
- Gome, a man, 585; *pl.* Gomes, men, 67, 282. A.S. *guma*, Lat. *homo*.
- Good, goods, property, wealth, 22, 51, 54, 67, &c.
- Gos, a goose; gos eye, a goose's egg, 225.
- Gost, spirit, 521, 529; the Spirit, 590.
- Graiþ, the plain truth, the truth, 34. See Grayþely = truly, *Allit. Poems*, C. 240; ed. Morris, E. E. T. S. From O.N. *greitha*, to make ready, explain.
- Graith, *adv.* readily, 232. [It seems put for graith way = ready or direct road; Piers Pl. A. i. 181.]
- Grayþed, prepared, 732. See Graiþ.
- Grayþliche, readily, truly, 529. See Graiþ.
- Grete, *adv.* greatly, 501.
- Greyn, grain, 230.
- Grysliehe, terribly, horribly, very wickedly, 585. A.S. *grislic*.
- Halp, helped, 508.
- Halt, holdeth, 345.
- Halwen, hallow, 356.
- Han, have, 569.
- Harlotes, men of lewd life, ribalds, riotous men, 52 (where it is the *gen. pl.*), 766, 781. [*Harlot* is a term generally applied to men; cf. Chaucer, ProL. l. 647.]
- Harlotri, riotous conduct, evil mode of life, 63.
- Haylsede, saluted, 231. A.S. *healsian*.
- He, she, 703. A.S. *heo*. See Ho.
- He, they, 471. A.S. *hi, hie*.
- Heer, hair, 423.
- Heize, *adv.* on high, 494, 551.
- Hele, health, salvation, 264, 573.
- Hem, *dat. pl.* to them, 53, 71, &c.: *acc. pl.* them, 79, 96, &c.
- Hemselue, themselves, 42.
- Hendliche, politely, *lit.* handily, 231. A.S. *gehende*.
- Henten, get, lay hands on, catch hold of, seize, 413, 642. A.S. *hentan*.
- Her, Here, their, 29, 31, 684, &c. A.S. *hira*.
- Heraud, herald, 179.
- Herberwe, to harbour, i. e. to lodge, 215.
- Herdeman, a shepherd, pastor, 231.
- Heremita, hermit, 308.
- Hertliche, heartily, 325.
- Hestes, commandments, 26, 345.
- Heþen, hence, 408.
- Heued, head, 317; (*pl.* ?) heads (?), 773. A.S. *heafod*, *pl. heafdu*.
- Heyz, high, 204.
- Heynesse, highness, haughtiness, 265, 356, 542.
- Hire, her, it, 782. Used with reference to *rule*; cf. Lat. *regula*, a rule, *fem.*
- Hirnes, corners, 182. A.S. *hirne*.
- Hizede, hied, hastened, 155.
- Ho, she, 411, 412, 415. A.S. *heo*.
- Hobelcn, go about clumsily, wander or "loaf" about, 106. [It does not imply lameness, but awkwardness; see Piers Pl. A. i. 113.]
- Hod, hood, 423.
- Hokschyne, (perhaps) gaiters, 426. Cf. *hoeshins, hushions*, gaiters (Jamieson). Perhaps = *hos-kins*, from *hose*. (Or *hok-synes* = *hock-sinews*.)
- Holly, holy, 595, 836; holly tyme, holiday time, time after harvest, 595.
- Hollich, Holliche, Hollyche, Holly, wholly, 26, 276, 678, 796, 815.

Homly, Homliche, in a homely way, plainly, 703; comfortably, 771.

Hondlen, handle, 108.

Honged, hung, 420.

Hongen, hang, bend over (*infin.*), 421.

Hongeh, hang, 739.

Hordome, whoredom, 766.

Huny, honey, 726. A.S. *hunig*.

Hye, 409, } hie, hasten.

Hye, 412, }

Hyre, her, it; said of the soul, 668.

[A.S. *sáwul* is *fem.*]

Hye, high, 208, 210. See Heize.

*The words beginning with I- are here collected; see also under Y.*

I-called, called, 574.

I-coruen, cut, carved, 161.

I-failed; is i-failed, hath failed, 98.

I-founded, founded, 47.

I-lyke, like, 546. A.S. *gelic*.

Iapers, jesters, mockers, 43.

Iapes, mockeries, deceits, tricks, 47.

Ieh, I, 155.

Ich a, Iche a, each, 109, 432, 702, 850.

Ichon, each one, 476.

Ijs, ice, 436. A.S. *ís*.

Iugulers, tricksters, 43. See note to Chaucer, l. 11453; ed. Tyrwhitt.

Kareyne, carrion, 644.

Knopped, full of knobs or bunches, 424. See *knobbe* and *knobbyd* in Prompt. Parv.; in the editor's note we find "A *knoppe* of a scho, *bull*."

Kuottes, knots, 161. "*Knot*, a boss, a round bunch of leaves, &c. The term is also used in reference to the foliage on the capitals of pillars." Gloss. of Arch.

Kundites, conduits, 195.

Kycheus, kitchens, 210.

Kynde, *adj.* natural, 489; kynde ypocrites, hypocrites by nature.

Kynde, *sb.* nature, 834; of kynde, by nature, 43; natural occupation, 760.

Kynrede, kindred, 486.

Kyrtel, kirtle, 229. A.S. *cyrtel*.

Lacche, get, catch, acquire, 598. A.S. *leccan*.

Lakke, defame, 540; blame, find fault, 538. "Somwhat *lakken* hym wolde she." Rom. of the Rose, 284. Du. *laken*.

Latun, latoun or latten, a name given to a mixed metal much resembling brass, 196. See note to *Laton* in Prompt. Parv.

Launceþ, launch out with, fling abroad, 551. Fr. *lancer*, to fling.

Lauoures, lavers, 196. "A cistern or trough to wash in." Gloss. of Arch. [Often of a large size.]

Lawze, laugh, 94.

Lechures, lechers, 44.

Leed, lead, 193.

Leel, leal, faithful, 390.

Leesinges, lies; leesinges lyeþ, they lie their lies, 379. Cf. Lesynges.

Leeue, believe, 363, 372, 390.

Leeuen, live, 359.

Leeueþ, believeth, 15; believe, 639.

Lef, dear, 372. Cf. Leue.

Lefte, remained, 374.

Lel, leal, true, 344. Cf. Leel.

Lellich, Lelliche, Lelly, Lellyche, leally, truly, faithfully, 235, 384, 639, 722.

Lemmans, mistresses, 83; lemmans holden=keep mistresses, 44. A.S. *léof*, dear, *man*, a person (male or female).

Leue, Lenen, lend, grant, give, 445, 741. A.S. *lenuan*, to lend, give. See also Leue.

Lengeden, continued long, dwelt, 310.

Lenten, Lent, 11; *gen.* Lentenes, 568.

Lere me, teach me the way to, commend me to, 343.

Lered, learned, 18, 25.

Lerne, teach, 402.

Leseþ, loseth, 15.

Lesten, last, 855.

Lesynges, leasings, lies, 593.

Letten, let, hinder, 346.

Leue, dear, 390. Cf. Lef.

Leue, believe, 524. Cf. Leeue.

Leue, give leave, grant, 366, 573.

Leuede, believed, 235; *pl.* Leueden, believed, 25, 62. [In l. 25 a better reading is *leueþ*; cf. l. 15.]

Leuest, liefest; leuest me were, would be most as I wish, 16.

- Leuest, believest, 342.  
 Leueþ, believe, 639, 754.  
 Lewed, Lewede, unlearned, lay, com-  
 mon, 18, 25, 568, 832.  
 Leyen, lay (pt. t. of *to lie*), 187.  
 Leyest, Lext, liest, 541. [There is  
 no difference of meaning between  
 the two forms, and it was usual to  
*repeat* the words in this phrase: cf.  
 "Til thow lixt and thou lixt lopen  
 out at ones." Piers Pl. ed. Wright,  
 p. 86.]  
 Leyne, to lend to, bestow money on  
 (without expecting it back), 544.  
*See* Lene.  
 Libben, live, 700.  
 Libbeþ, live, 475, 610.  
 Liggeþ, lie, 83. A.S. *liggan*.  
 Liste; hem liste = it pleased them,  
 165. Cf. l. 71.  
 Loken, look out, find out, choose,  
 593.  
 Lollede, lolled about, wagged about,  
 224. "And lyk a leþerne pors  
*lullede* his chekes." Piers Pl. A.  
 v. 110.  
 Lollede, called nim *loller*, spoke of  
 him as *lolling*, 532. *See* the note.  
 Lone, a loan, a lending, 716. *See*  
 Bode.  
 Lordynges, lords, 609.  
 Lore, teaching, 640.  
 Lorels, abandoned wretches, good-  
 for-nothing fellows, 44, 721, 755.  
 From A.S. *léosan*, pp. *loren*, to lose.  
 Cf. Losels.  
 Loresmen, teachers, 290.  
 Losels, Losells, abandoned wretches,  
 worthless fellows, 96, 597, 750.  
 827. A.S. *léosan*, to lose. Cf.  
 Lorels.  
 Loþere, more loath, less willing, 544.  
 Louerd, Lord, 795.  
 Louren, look sourly, look displeased,  
 556. Du. *louren*; cf. Sc. *glowre*.  
 Loutede, stooped, knelt, 333. A.S.  
*hlutan*.  
 Lowynge, humbling, 568. "Lowyn  
 or mekyn. *Humilio*." Prompt.  
 Parv.  
 Lulling, *sb.* a lulling, a singing such  
 as hushes one to sleep, 77. "Lul-  
 lynge of yonge chylder. *Nenacio*."  
 Prompt. Parv.  
 Lust, pleasure, 700. A.S. *lust*.  
 Lust, Luste, it pleases, (*with dat.*) 71,  
 301. A.S. *lystan*.  
 Lybben, to live, 512. A.S. *lybban*.  
 Lybbeþ, live, 45, 110, 477.  
 Lyken, please, 77.  
 Lyknes, a likeness, i.e. a parable, 263.  
 Lymitour, a limitor, a friar who begs  
 within a limited district, 597.  
 Lym-zerde, a limed twig, such as birds  
 are caught with, 564. Cf. *Gleym*.  
 Lyuede, lived, 235; *pl.* Lyueden,  
 310.  
 Madde, art mad, 41; am mad, 280.  
 [Observe its use as a neuter verb,  
 without *to be*.]  
 Maistrelly, like a master or doctor,  
 847.  
 Malisons, curses, 718.  
 Mansede, wicked, sinful, 718. A.S.  
*mán*, a crime.  
 Masedere, more in a maze, more con-  
 fused, 826.  
 Maystri, mastery, dominion, 578.  
 Mede, reward, 533, 712, 715.  
 Mel, meal, 109.  
 Mendynauns, mendicants, beggars, 66.  
 Mene, mean; *meue mongcorn*, corn  
 of a common and mixed sort, 786.  
 Cf. A.S. *mengan*, to mix.  
 Menelich, meanly, 108.  
 Mensk, grace, favour, (*lit.* humanity),  
 81. From A.S. *mennisc*, human.  
 Merciable, merciful, 629.  
 Merkes, marks, badges, tokens, 177.  
 Meseles, lepers, 623. O.Fr. *mesel*;  
 Lat. *miser*, *misellus*.  
 Mete, *lit.* moderate, middling; hence,  
 tight, scanty, insufficient, 423. Cf.  
 the A.S. phrase "micle and mæte,"  
 great and small; Guthlac, l. 24;  
 ed. Grein.  
 Misdon hem, commit trespass, trans-  
 gress, 630.  
 Money-worþe, money's worth, 715.  
 Moneþ, month, 248.  
 Mong-corn, mixed corn, 786. *See*  
 Mene.  
 Morþer, *sb.* murder, 635.  
 Morþeren, *vb.* to murder, 666.  
 Mot, Mote, 121, 520, 557, 591. It is  
 difficult to give the *exact force*; it  
 more nearly answers to our modern

- phrase *must needs* than to *may* or *must*; it is the A.S. *ic mót*, of which *ic móste*, I *must*, is the *past* tense.
- Munte, *vb. refl.* mounted, went, 171.
- Mychel, mickle, much, 55, 94, 673.
- Myddel-erde, the middle-earth, i. e. the earth, the world, 535; *gen.* myddel-erde, of the world, in the world, 35. A.S. *middan-geard*.
- Myrales, miracle-plays, 107.
- Myschef, mishap, accident; at myschef, by accident, 623.
- Myster, kind, sort, 574. See Halliwell. *Lit.* a trade, occupation, O. Fr. *mestier*, Lat. *ministerium*.
- Myteynes, mittens, 428.
- Myztestou, Myzt-tou, mightest thou, 123, 141. [Of these, the former follows the A.S. *indicative*, the latter the *subjunctive* mood.]
- Ne, nor, 628; ne—ne, neither—nor, 80. A.S. *ne*.
- Nemne, name, call, 472; nemne þe nouzt, call thee a thing of naught, 540.
- Noblich, nobly, 128.
- Nolde (= ne wolde), would not, 190, 198.
- Nones, in phr. for the nones, i. e. for the nonce, for the once, for the occasion, 183, 185. *Corrupted from* A.S. *for þan ánes*. [See *Ormulum*, ed. White, v. ii. p. 642.]
- Nyl (= ne wyl), will not, 249.
- O, one, one and the same, 440, 441. See *Oo*.
- On, one, 789.
- On, upon, in, 342, 795, 799, 822. A.S. *on*.
- Ones, once, 491. A.S. *ánes*.
- Oneþe, scarcely, 217.
- Onliche, Onlie, singularly, specially, in a singular and special way, 534; in a way of their own, 610. Cf. A.S. *énlíc*.
- Oo, a, one; oo poynt, one bit, one jot, 198.
- Opon, upon, 90, 103, &c.
- Orchezardes, orchards, or rather, gardens, 166. A.S. *ort-geard*.
- Oþer, either, 676; or, 62, 480, 712, 747, 757. A.S. *oððe*.
- Palke, written for Pakke, pack, 399. (We often find *lk* written for *kk*.)
- Paraunter, peradventure, 845. See 1. 846.
- Parten, to impart, give away, 301.
- Pasen, Passen, to surpass, 666; to go beyond, surpass, 710, 711; go too far, 846.
- Passeþ, surpasseth, 834; passeþ pur-sutes, surpass all persecutions (by others), 664.
- Patred, repeated constantly, said over and over again, 6. See note.
- Paynt, painted, 121.
- Pekokes, peacocks, 764.
- Penounes, pennons, small banners, 562. "Penone, lytlylle banere." Prompt. Parv.
- Pertriches, partridges, 764.
- Peynt, painted, 192; peynt til, painted tiles, 194. This is better than *poynt til* = pointed tiles, square tiles. See note.
- Pilche, a fur garment, or garment of skin with the hair on, 243. Lat. *pellis, pellicea*.
- Pild, bald, 839. See *Pyllyd* in Prompt. Parv.; and cf. "*Peel'd* priest" in Shakesp. I. Henry VI. Ac. I. sc. 3, l. 30.
- Plouers, plovers, 764.
- Plyzt, plighted, 240.
- Pomels, pommels, 562. "*Pomel*, a knob, knot, or boss; the term is used in reference to a finial, or ornament on the top to a conical or a dome-shaped roof of a turret," &c. Gloss. of Arch.
- Portred, portrayed, adorned, 192.
- Possessioners, possessioners, 631. See note.
- Pouere, poor, 521, 567.
- Pouerte, poverty, 113.
- Powghe, pouch, or box, 618. See *Terre*.
- Poynt, Poynte, piece, part, 6; piece, bit, 194; oo poynt = one bit, a single jot, 198.
- Poyntes, points, 562. [In an heraldic sense.]
- Prese, press, press forward, 749.

- Prest, ready, 288. O. Fr. *prest*, Fr. *prêt*.
- Pris, chief, excellent; her pris lijf, i. e. the *best* part of their life, 621.
- Prijs, chief, 256. [It seems here to be an *adjective*, as in l. 621.]
- Propre, own, 569.
- Proue, *vb.* test, 247. Proue and asaye = test and try it.
- Pryuitie, secret working, 834.
- Pulched, polished, 121, 160. "Pulchon. *Polio*;" Prompt. Parv.
- Pulpit, 661.
- Puple, people, 66, 74, 87, 713, &c.
- Pure litel, very little, 170; pure myte, a mere mite, 267.
- Purliche, purely, 279; hence, completely, altogether, 313, 351, 713.
- Purse, bag, 301.
- Pursut, persecution; pursut of = persecution by, 655.
- Pursuch, persecute, 664.
- Pylion, a sort of cap used by priests, esp. by cardinals, 839. Ital. and Span. *pileo*, Lat. *pileus*.
- Queues, women, queans, 84. A.S. *cwæn*.
- Queynt, Queynte, cunning, sly, 303, 432; cunningly contrived, curious, 552.
- Queyntise, Queyntyse, sleight, cunning, craft, 383, 507. "Queyntyse, or sleythe. *Astucia*." Prompt. Parv.
- Queynteli, curiously, 161.
- Quyck, in phr. quyck myre = moving mire, quagmire, 226. [*Lit.* a *live* mire.]
- Quyten, quit, requite with, 351.
- Rageman, a catalogue, a list, 180. See *Ragman Roll* in Jamieson.
- Raken, wander, rove about, 72. O.N. *reika*, to ramble.
- Randes, strips, slices, 763. "To cut me into *rands* and sirloins." Beaumont & Fletcher. *Wildgoose Chase*, Ac. V. sc. 2. "*Giste de bæuf*, a *rand* of beef, a long and fleshy peece, cut out from between the flanke and buttock." Cotgr.
- Rauzt, reached, obtained, 733.
- Redeliche, 811, } readily, speedily.  
Rediliche, 809, }
- Respondes, responds, 377.
- Reufull, miserable, in pitiful condition, 432.
- Reuthe, pity, 738.
- Rewle, rule (of an order), 377, 536.
- Rewme, realm, 774.
- Ribaut, ribald, worthless fellow, 376.
- Roperen, rothers, heifers, 431. A.S. *hryðer*.
- Rychesse (*sing.*), riches, 733.
- Ryzt-lokede, righteous, just, 372. Apparently corrupted from A.S. *rihllie*; cf. note to l. 684.
- Say, saw, 158.
- Schaf, chaff, 663.
- Schenden, ruin, disgrace, blame, 481, 677. A.S. *scendan*.
- Schendeþ, ruin, 488.
- Schending, *sb.* reproof, disgrace, disgraceful end, 94.
- Schent, blamed, reprov'd, 9.
- Scheten, shut, shut up, enclose, 773.
- Schon, shoon, shoes, 299, 424, 735, 738.
- Se, a seat, 558.
- Segge, say, 793.
- Seiz, saw, 208, 421.
- Selles, cells, 60. See Cell.
- Selure, a decorated ceiling, 201. Lat. *calatura*. See note to "Geelyn with syllure. *Celo*" in Prompt. Parv.
- Sely, poor, simple, 442, 444, 663, 672, 675. A.S. *scelig*, happy, blessed.
- Semliche, seemly, comely, 201.
- Sepultures, burials, buryings, 469.
- Sep, see, 652.
- Sexe, six, 739.
- Seweden, followed, pursued, 531.
- Sey, saw, 146. [Prob. an error for *se* = see.]
- Seyn, say, 25, 56, 85.
- Sikerli, for a certainty, with certainty, 64. "Sykyr, (or serteyne)." Prompt. Parv.
- Sipe, Sipen, Sippe, since, 153, 353; seeing that, 259. A.S. *sissæ*.
- Sizede, sighed, 442.
- Slaube, sloth, 91. Another reading is *slaughte*, destruction.
- Slen, to slay, 668.
- Slomerers, slumberers, 91.



- Soget, subject, 650.  
 Sorweþ, sorroweth, 688.  
 Soþ, true, 841, 842.  
 Soþe, sooth, truth, 364, 388, 658, 794.  
 Soffast, true, very, 822.  
 Soutere, cobbler, 744, 752. Lat. *sutor*.  
 Sowle hele, health of the soul, 680.  
 Spedfullest, readiest, 264.  
 Spicerie, spicery, spices, 301.  
 Sprad, spread, scattered loosely, 301.  
 Stappying, stepping, 649.  
 Steiz, ascended, 810. A.S. *stigan*, pt. t. *ic stáh*.  
 Stere, stir, 829.  
 Sterue, Steruen, die, 69, 740. A.S. *steorfan*.  
 Stodyen, study, 588.  
 Ston, rock, 806, 810.  
 Strakeþ, roam, wander wide, (*lit.* stretch), 82.  
 Stre, straw, 773.  
 Stues, stews, 631.  
 Stumblen, stumble about, 591.  
 Sturen, stir, 588.  
 Stynkande, stinking, 649.  
 Styztle, to set in order, direct, 315. A.S. *stihtan*.  
 Suen, follow, 60, 105. O.Fr. *suir*.  
 Sueres, followers, 148.  
 Sueþ, follow, 454.  
 Suffraunce, patience, 652. "*Bele vertue est suffraunce*." Piers Plowm. ed. Whitaker; p. 225.  
 Suffrant, patient, 646.  
 Suffreþ, endure, 650.  
 Sustren, sisters, 85, 329.  
 Suweþ, follow, 577. See Sueþ.  
 Swiche, such, 519.  
 Swyþe, very, 622.  
 Sygge, say, 390.  
 Syker, safe, secure, 306, 350; *adv.* surely, certainly, 237, 704; *superl.* Sykerest, surest, securest, best, 277.  
 Synagoges, synagogues, 558.  
 Syþen, since, 241; afterwards, 668, 806.  
 Tabernacles, cells for reconnoitring, 168.  
 Tatered, jagged, 753.  
 Tempren, temper, subdue, mortify, 743.  
 Terre, in phr. terre powze, 618. Mr Wright says, "a torn sack or poke (?)" The old glossary to the edition of 1553 suggests "tar box;" and I think it is right; only, strictly speaking, a *powzhe* is a *pouch*. *Terre* is the usual old spelling of *tar*; see Prompt. Parv.; and in Halliwell, s. v. Tarbox, we find—"a box used by shepherds for carrying tar, used for anointing sores in sheep, marking them, &c. *Tarre boyste* = tar box, occurs in Chester Plays, i. 125."  
 Þeiz, though, 69.  
 Þere as, there where, 471.  
 Þis, þies, these, 290, 392.  
 Þo, those, 96, 619, 853. A.S. *þá*.  
 Þolede, suffered, 90, 823. A.S. *þolian*.  
 Tildeth, set up, 494. See Tyld.  
 To-forn, before, beforehand, 485.  
 Tonne, tun, 221.  
 Too, toe, 649.  
 Toten, to see clearly, perceive, 142; to look out, spy round, 168; *pt. t.* Totede, looked, 339; *pl.* Toteden, in phr. toteden out = peeped out, 425. "*Totehyll*, *Specula*." Prompt. Parv. *Totyng-place* is a watch-tower; Wycliffe's Bible; Isaiah xxi. 5.  
 Touche, the sense of touch, 537.  
 Trechurly, treacherously, 475.  
 Treddede, trod, walked over, 425.  
 Trofle, trifle, 352. [*Trefle* in the old printed text; but MS. A has the spelling *trofle*. O.Fr. *trufle*, a trifle; *trufster*, to mock, cheat.]  
 Troifardes, triflers, cheats, 742. Cf. l. 475.  
 Trosten, *vb.* trust, 237; on to trosten, to trust in, 350.  
 Trussen, pack up, 618.  
 Tweie, Twey, Tweyne, two, 428, 439.  
 Twyes, twice, 178.  
 Twynnen, to count as twins, to consider alike, 496.  
 Tyld, set up like a tent, set up, raised, 181. A.S. *toldian*, to spread a tilt or tent.

- Tylyen, to till, 743. A.S. *tilian*.  
 Tymbren, build, 723. A.S. *timbrian*.  
 Tymen, bring, induce, compel, 742.  
 Compare *temen*, in Chaucer, House  
 of Fame, 1744.  
 Tyn, tin, 195.  
 Tynt, lost, 537. O.N. *tjna*.
- Vnderneþen, underneath, 695.  
 Vnneþe, scarcely, with difficulty, 45.  
 A.S. *un-ēaðe*. See *Oneþe*.  
 Vnteyned, unfastened, not grounded,  
 516. A.S. *tjnan*; see note. [It  
 should rather have been spelt  
 Vntynd.]  
 Vsen, use, 63.  
 Vseþ, use, 690, 693, 697.
- Wagged, waggd about, 226.  
 Waite, pay heed, look, 361. O.Fr.  
*gaiter*. See *Awaytede*.  
 War, wary; ben war, beware, 844.  
 Warlawes, deceivers, 783. Sc. *warlo*,  
 A.S. *wærloga*, a word-breaker, liar.  
 Prob. *distinct* from Sc. *warlawe*, a  
 warlock; see *warlo*, *warlawe* in  
 Jamieson.  
 Waryeþ, curseth, 615. A.S. *wærgian*.  
 Waseled, bemired himself, 430. From  
 O.E. *waise*, *wose*, A.S. *wós*, ooze,  
 mud.  
 Waspe, wasp, 648.  
 Wayuen, to waive, give up, cast aside,  
 530, 685. O.Fr. *guesver*, to a-  
 bandon; cf. *guerpier*, Ger. *werfen*.  
 See *Guesver* in Cotgrave and Roque-  
 fort.  
 Wele, weal, wealth, 20, 403, 784.  
 Wende, weened, expected, 32, 452.  
 Werche, Werchen, *vb.* work, 260,  
 285, 527, 788.  
 Werdliche, 371, worldly. [*Werd* is  
 often spelt *werd* in O. English.]  
 Werwolues, werwolves, 459.  
 Wexen, wax, become, 525.  
 Whizt, 32, } a wight.  
 Whit, 430, }  
 Whou, Whow, Whouþ, how, 42, 141,  
 192, 234, 365.  
 Whyztes, wights, 812.  
 Wicheþ, wisheth, 615.  
 Wijt, wit, 833, 854.  
 Wijzt, a wight, man, 233; see *Wizt*.
- Wil, while, 416.  
 Wilne, will (*pl.* of *wil*), 216.  
 Wilnest, desirest, 676.  
 Wilneþ, *sing.* desireth, 20; *pl.* desire,  
 covet, 361, 371, 497, 499. A.S.  
*wilnian*.  
 Wissen, to make to know, to teach,  
 100, 233. A.S. *wissian*.  
 Wist, known, 452.  
 Wiþ, with; to coueren wiþ our bones  
 = to cover our bones with, 116;  
 toilen wiþ = bestow toil on, 742.  
 Wizt, a wight, man, 17.  
 Wizt, a whit; a litil wizt = a little  
 whit, ever so little, 538.  
 Wlon, hems, hemmed borders (?), 736.  
 A.S. *wlo*, a fringe, hem, border;  
 whence perhaps *wlon* is formed as  
 a plural, like *schon* and *been*. Or  
 else we may adopt the reading  
*wolne* (MS. B) = wool, nap; only  
*wolne* would more properly be an  
*adj.* = *woollen*.  
 Wolward, 788. "*Wolwarde*, without  
 any lynnene next ones body, *sans*  
*chemyse*." Palsgrave. To go  
*woolward* was a common way of  
 doing penance, viz. with the *wool*  
*towards* one's skin.  
 Wombe, belly, 762.  
 Wone, dwelling-place, 164.  
 Wonynge, dwelling, 768.  
 Woon, a dwelling-place; hence, a  
 building, 172.  
 Wordlyche, worldly, 784. See *Werd-*  
*liche*.  
 Wortes, worts, 787; *wortes flechles*  
 wroughte, vegetables cooked with-  
 out meat.  
 Worþe, Worþen, become, be, be made,  
 748, 826, 828; to become, to be,  
 9, 580, 776; *pp.* become, 431 (see  
 note); to happen, in phr. *wo mote*  
*3ou worþen*, may wo happen to  
 you, evil be to you, 493. A.S.  
*weorðan*.  
 Worþ to, become, 746. See *Worþe*.  
 Worpely, worthy, estimable, 233.  
 A.S. *wurðlic*.  
 Wouþ, how, 356. See *Whou*.  
 Wynwe-schete, a sheet used in win-  
 nowing corn, 435.  
 Wyten, to know, 32. A.S. *witan*.

The following are the past participles, &c., beginning with Y-; see also under I.

- Y-benched, furnished with benches or seats, 205.  
 Y-beld, built, 172. See Y-buld.  
 Y-blessed, blessed, 520.  
 Y-botend, buttoned, 296.  
 Y-bouzt, bought, 569.  
 Y-buld, built, 157. See Y-beld.  
 Y-clense (*inf.*), to cleanse, 760.  
 Y-cloped, clothed, 608.  
 Y-corven, carved, 173.  
 Y-couenant, covenanted, 38.  
 Y-crowned, crowned, 805.  
 Y-dizte, Y-dyzt, fitted up, provided, 211; prepared, made, 223. A.S. *dihtan*, to arrange.  
 Y-founde, founded, 242.  
 Y-founden, found, 631.  
 Y-gadered, gathered, 189.  
 Y-greiped, prepared, fitted, 196; made ready, 626. See Graip.  
 Y-hamled, cut off short, docked, 300.  
 "Algate a foot is *hameled* of thi sorwe." Chaucer; Troil. & Cress. ii. 138. A.S. *hamelian*.  
 Y-hid, hid, 643.  
 Y-hyled, covered, 193. A.S. *helan*.  
 Y-knowen, Y-enowen, known, 252, 800; know (*inf.*), 647.  
 Y-leyd, laid, 263.  
 Y-lich, alike (*adj.*), 730.  
 Y-maked, made, 93.  
 Y-medled, placed in the middle, placed alternately (with other things, i.e. with the shields), 177.  
 Y-noumbred, numbered, 178.  
 Y-paynted, painted, 506.  
 Y-paued, paved, 194.  
 Y-peynt, Y-peynted, painted, 160, 202.  
 Y-rade, read, 129.  
 Y-rosted, roasted, 764.  
 Y-sacred, consecrated, sanctified, 186.  
 Y-set, set, 201, 315, 761.  
 Y-sewed, sewn, 229.  
 Y-stongen, pierced, pricked through (*lit.* stung), 553.  
 Y-suled, soiled, sullied, 752. A.S. *sylian*. Dan. *söle*.  
 Y-tizt, firmly fastened, fixed, set, 168. *Lit.* tied, from A.S. *tigan*. Spenser uses *tight* for *tied*.  
 Y-toted, inspected, 219. See Toten.  
 Y-vsod, used, 510.  
 Y-wis, certainly, 555. Cf. Ger. *gewiss*.  
 Y-worpen, become, 665; see Worpen.  
 Y-wrouzt, wrought, 162.  
 Ymped, grafted, 305. "Impyd or grafted. *Insertus*" Prompt. Parv.  
 Yuele, *adv.* evilly, 660; ill, 58.  
 3emede, looked carefully; 3emede opon = closely regarded, 159. A.S. *3yman*, to pay heed to.  
 3erne, diligently, 159.  
 3if, if, 62, &c.  
 3yuen, to give, 54.  
 3yueþ, give, 114.

## INDEX OF NAMES.

- Austen, St Augustine, 579, 777.  
 Austyn, an Augustine friar, 239;  
   Austyns, 268.  
 Austynes, St Augustine's, 466, 509.  
 Aue-marie, 7.  
  
 Brut, Wat; Walter Brute, 657.  
  
 Carm, Carmelite, 38, 39; *see* Karmes.  
 Carmeli, Mt Carmel, 57.  
 Caym, Cain, 486; *see* Kaymes.  
 Charthous, Carthusians, 674.  
 Crede, 8, 36, 38, 101, 131, 234, 272,  
   343, 448, 792.  
 Credo; the first word of the Creed,  
   795.  
 Crist, 1, 37, 57, 62, &c.  
 Cristen, Christian, 41, 382, 792;  
   Christians, 470, 669.  
 Christendam, 30, 278, 481.  
  
 Domynike, St Dominick, 353, 464,  
   510, 579, 776.  
  
 Elves, Elias', Elijah's, 383.  
  
 Farysens, Pharisees, 487, 547  
 Four orders, 29, 153, 284, 451.  
 Fraunces, seynt, 126, 291, 293, 298,  
   465, 511, 579, 775.  
  
 Goliass, 479.  
  
 Helye, Elijah, 777.  
 Herdforthe, Hertford, 362.  
 Holy Gost, 802, 815, 836.  
 Hyldegare, St Hildegarde, 703.  
  
 Jesu, 14, 575, 799.
- Jewes, 14.  
  
 Karmes, Carmelites, 338, 340, 382.  
 Kaymes, Cain's, 559.  
  
 Lady; Our Lady, 77, 79, 384.  
 Lenten, Lent, 11, 568.  
 Lucifer, 374, 578.  
  
 Marie, 270, 803.  
 Maries-men, 48.  
 Menoure, Minorite, 33, 40, 276.  
 Menures, Minorites, 103, 381.  
 Minoures, Minorites, 281.  
  
 Parleмент-hous, 202.  
 Paternoster, 6, 336.  
 Paul (the hermit), 308.  
 Peres (the plowman), 473, 482, 579,  
   791.  
 Petur, St Peter, 710.  
 Popes, 256, 467.  
 Powel, Paul, 80, 87.  
 Prechours, friars Preachers, Domini-  
   cans, 154, 348, 354, 373, 381, 386,  
   506.  
 Pye, freres of the, 65.  
  
 Robertes-men, Roberds-men or vaga-  
   bonds, 72.  
 Rome, 46, 256, 467.  
  
 Satan, 480; Satanas, 717.  
  
 Trynitee, 127.  
  
 Wedenesday, 13.  
 Wycliff, 528.

## God spede the Plough.

(Lansdowne MS. 762; fol. 5 a.)

### A PROCESSE OR AN EXORTATION TO TENDRE THE CHARGIS OF THE TRUE HUSBONDYS.

As I me walked ouer feldis wide <sup>1</sup>  
 When men began to Ere and to Sowe,  
 I behelde husbondys howe faste they hide,  
 With their bestis and plowes all on A rowe;  
 I stode and behelde the bestis well drawe  
 To ere the londe that was so tough;  
 Than to an husbond I sed this sawe,  
 "I pray to God, spede wele the plough."

As I went over  
 the fields in  
 ploughing time, I  
 saw husbandmen  
 at work, and said  
 "God speed the  
 plough!"

4

8

The husbondys helde vp harte and hande,  
 And said, "that is nedefull for to praye;  
 For all the yere we labour with the [lande],  
 With many a comberous clot of [claye],<sup>2</sup>  
 To mayntayn this worlde yf that we maye,  
 By downe and by dale and many a slough;  
 Therefore it is nedefull for to saye,  
 'I praye to God, spede wele the plough.'

One of them  
 answered—"It is  
 needful to say so;  
 we have hard  
 work of it."

12

[Fol. 5b.]

16

<sup>1</sup> This line is omitted in its right place; but is written perpendicularly on the inner margin of the leaf, with a guide-line to shew its position.

<sup>2</sup> The corner of the leaf is torn away.

- The parson gets  
the tithe-sheaf.      And so shulde of right the parson praye,  
That hath the tithe shefe of the londe ;
- We have to pay  
our servants, and  
the clerk and  
sexton want  
something.      For our sarvauntys we Moste nedis paye,  
Or ellys ful still the plough maye stonde.      20  
Than cometh the clerk anon at hande,  
To haue A shef of corne there it groweth ;  
And the sexten somwhate in his hande ;  
' I praye to God, spede wele the plough.'      24
- The king's  
purveyors want  
wheat and meat,      The kyngis puruicours also they come,  
To haue whete and otys at the kyngis nede ;  
And over that befe and Mutton,  
And butter and pulleyn, so god me spede !      28
- and we must give  
it, and be paid  
with a beating.      And to the kyngis courte we moste it lede,  
And our payment shalbe a styk of A bough ;  
And yet we moste speke faire for drede—  
' I praye to God, spede wele the plough.'      32
- We have to pay  
the fifteenth, and  
our lord's rent ;      To paye the Fiftene ayenst our ease,<sup>1</sup>  
Beside the lordys rente of our londe ;  
Thus be we shepe shorne, we may not chese,  
And yet it is full lytell vnderstonde.      36
- also bailiffs and  
beadles.      Than bayllys and bedellis woll putto their hande  
In enquestis to doo vs sorowe Inough,  
But yf we quite right wele the londe—  
[' I ]<sup>2</sup> praye to God, spede wele the plough.'      40
- Prisoners come  
and beg of us,      [Than come]th prisoners and sheweth their nede,  
[What gret] sorowe in prison theye drye ;  
[' To buye the kyngi]s pardon we most take hede'—
- [Fol. 6 a.]      For man and beste they woll take money.      44
- and then come the  
clerks of St John.      Than cometh the clerkez of saint Iohn Frary,  
And rede in their bokis mennyis namyis inough,  
And all they live by husbondrye—  
' I praye to God, spede wele the plough.'      48

<sup>1</sup> MS. "eases."<sup>2</sup> The corner of the leaf is torn away.

- Then comme the graye Freres and make their mone,  
And call for money our soulis to save ;  
Then comme the white Freres and begyn to grone,  
Whete or barley they woll fayne haue ; 52  
Then commeth the freres Augustynes & begynneth to  
crave Augustines, and  
Dominicans.
- Corne or chese, for they haue not Inough ;  
Then commeth the blak freres which wolde fayne haue—  
' I praye to God, spede wele t[h]e plough.' 56
- And yet, amongst other, we may not forgete  
The poore obseruauntes that been so holy ;  
They muste amongis vs haue corne or mete,  
They teche vs alwaye to fle from foly, 60  
And liue in vertue full devowtely,  
Preching dayly Sermondys inough  
With good Examples full graciously—  
' I praye to God, spede wele the plough.' 64  
Then come the  
poor Observants  
to be paid for  
preaching.
- Than cometh the Sompner to haue som rente,  
And ellis he woll teche vs A newe lore,  
Saying, we haue lefte behynde vnproved som testament,  
And so he woll make vs lese moche more. 68  
Then commeth the grenewex which greveth vs sore,  
With ronnyng in reragis it doth vs sorowe Inough,  
And After, we knowe nother why ne where-fore—  
' I praye to God, spede wele the plough.' 72  
Then come the  
summer, and
- Then commeth prestis that goth to rome  
For to haue silver to singe at *Scala celi* ;  
Than commeth clerkys of Oxford and make their mone,  
To her scole hire they most haue money. 76  
Then commeth the tipped-staves for the Marshalse,  
And saye they haue prisoners mo than Inough ;  
Then commeth the mynstrellis to make vs gle—  
' I praye to God, spede wele the plough.' 80  
Then come priests,  
and clerks of  
Oxford ;  
[Fol. 6 b.]  
and tipstaves and  
minstrels.

We have too to  
pay the lawyer for  
pleading;

At london Also yf we woll plete,  
We shal not be spared, good chepe nor dere ;  
Our man of lawe may not be forgete,  
But he moste haue money every quarte[re ;] 84

and to give to  
chartered beggars  
and weeping  
women."

And *somme comme* begging *with* the kyngis charter,  
And saye, bisshoppis haue graunted ther-to pardon  
Inough ;

And wymen *commeth* weping on the same Maner--  
'I praye to God, spede wele the plough.' 88

I thanked him,  
and prayed God  
to speed the  
plough, and all  
ploughmen.

And than I thanked this good husband,  
And prayed God the plough to spede,  
And All tho that laboreth with the londe,  
And them that helpeth them *with* worde or dede. 92  
God<sup>1</sup> give them grace such life to lede,  
That in their concience maye be mery Inough,  
And heven blisse to be their mede,  
And ever I praye, " God<sup>1</sup> spede the plough." 96



## NOTES.

THE MS. (Lansdowne, 762) from which this poem is taken is a sort of album or collection of seraps, not all in the same handwriting. There is little doubt but that this copy of "God speed the Plough," belongs to the reign of Henry the Eighth, for in the same hand there is a table of Kings of England, with verses about them, which ends with saying that Henry the Seventh was buried at Westminster. At the same time, Mr Hamilton thinks the handwriting to be not very late, but to belong to the *early* part of Henry the Eighth's reign. The poem itself does not seem to be much earlier; and the complaints of the exactions made by the King's purveyors, bailiffs, bealdes, the summoner and the "grenewex," seem particularly suitable to the reign of Henry the Seventh. As a conjectural date, A.D. 1500 may not be very far from the truth. Another poem, written much in the style of "Speed the Plough," has for its burden the line,

"London, thowe arte the flowre of cities all;" (*fol.* 8).

1. Even without the "guide-line," we can tell by the structure of the stanza that the line written in the margin is really l. 1. The 2nd, 4th, 5th, and 7th lines of each stanza rime together throughout.

22. *Groweth*. This seems a strange rime to *plough*. Perhaps it should be *growe* = grew.

28. Wright, in his Provincial Dictionary, quotes the following:—

"A false theefe

That came, like a false foxe, my *pullain* to kill and mischeefe."

*Gammer Gurton*, Old Pl. ii. 63.

43. The words within square brackets are conjectural, and were suggested by the fact recorded in *Piers Plowman*, that getting pardon for a bribe even from a King is not altogether a thing unknown; see *Piers Pl.* Text A. Pass. III. ll. 16—20, and IV. ll. 120—125 (ed. Skeat, 1867).

45. *Frery*, friary, fraternity; there was one such in Clerkenwell.

49. See note to the "Crede," l. 29. On fol. 9 *b* of this very Lansdowne MS. we find the following. "Fratres London. Whitefreres in fletestrete, Carmelitarum. Blak freres within ludgate, *predicatorum vel* Jacob: Greye freres within newgate, *Minorum*. Augusteyn freres by saint Antonyes, *Augustinencium*. Crowched freres, Fratres sancte Crucis."

67. This line is too long. The word "*behynde*" is superfluous.

74. *Scala celi*. Compare—

"In þat place a chapelle ys,  
*Scala cely* called hit ys,  
 'Laddere of heuen' men clepeþ hit."

*The Stacyons of Rome, in Political, Religious, and Love Poems,*  
 p. 118 (E. E. T. S.)

On which Mr Rossetti has the note, "The chapel *Scala cœli* stands near the foregoing church of St Anastatius. It was built over the cemetery of St Zeno, and has undergone restorations from 1582 onwards. It derives its name from a vision of St Bernard's, who, while celebrating a funereal mass, saw the souls for whom he was praying going up to heaven by a ladder."

We should compare with this poem the feeling expressed in the Spanish proverb—"Lo que no lleva Christo, lleva el fisco"; that which Christ (i. e. the clergy) takes not, the exchequer carries away. Lines 75, 76 remind us of Chaucer's clerk of Oxenford, who

"busily gan for the soules pray  
 Of hem that gaf him wherewith to scolay."

85. These chartered beggars remind us of Edie Ochiltree, the King's Bedesman, with his blue gown and pewter badge, in Sir Walter Scott's novel of the Antiquary; see vol. I. ch. iv.

It should be noted that the word *plough* is made to rime with *tough*, *slough*, *groweth* (*growe?*), *bough*, and *inough* (8 times). The probable pronunciation seems to be the same as now-a-days, *slough* and *bough* being still admissible rimes. In the Trinity MS. of "*Piers Plowman*" (classmark R. 3. 14) there is a picture of two "husbondys" with a plough and two "bestis," with a motto written above, which runs—"God spede þe plouz & send us korne I-now"—where *I-now* represents the old pronunciation of *inough*. In the MS. of the same poem in Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, the same motto occurs, but without the picture.

## GLOSSARIAL INDEX AND INDEX OF NAMES

TO

## "GOD SPEDE THE PLOUGH."

- Bayllys, bailiffs, 37.  
 Bedellis, beadles, 37.  
 Chepe, *in phr.* good chepe = at a good market, at a low price, 82.  
 Chese, choose, 35.  
 Dye, suffer, endure, 42. Sc. *dree*. A.S. *dréogan*.  
 Enquestis, inquiries, searches, 38.  
 Ere, to plough, 2, 6. A.S. *erian*. Lat. *arare*. See Isaiah xxx. 24; 1 Sam. viii. 12.  
 Fiftene, fifteenth, a tax amounting to a fifteenth of one's property, 33.  
 Frary, fraternity, 35. "*Frary clerk*, a member of a clerical brotherhood." Wright's Prov. Dict.  
 Freres, graye (Franciscans), 49; white (Carmelites), 51; Augustynes, 53; blak (Dominicans), 55.  
 Grenewex, 69. Greenwax was used for estreats delivered to the sheriffs out of the king's exchequer. These estreats were under the seal of that court, made in *greenwax*. See Blount's Law Dictionary.  
 Hide, hied, hastened, 3.  
 Husbond, husbandman, 7, 89; *pl.* husbondys, 3, 9.  
 Iohn, saint, 45.  
 Lese, lose, 68.  
 London, 81.  
 Marshalse, 77.  
 Obseruauntis, friars observants, 58. "Observants, a branch of the Franciscan order, otherwise called *Recollects*." Imperial Dict.  
 Oxford, 75.  
 Plete, plead, 81.  
 Pulleyn, poultry, 28. Cf. *Pulleye* in Chaucer.  
 Quite, quit; i. e. pay rent for in full so as to be *quit*, 39.  
 Reragis, arrears, 70.  
 Rome, 73.  
 Scala celi, the name of a chapel in Rome, 74.  
 Sermondys, sermons, 62.  
 Sexten, sexton, 23.  
 Sompner, a summoner, 65.  
 There, where, 22.  
 Tipped-staves, tipstaves, constables, 77. So called from their bearing a staff tipped with metal.  
 Vnderstonde, understood, 36.

RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED,  
LONDON & BUNGAY.



THE HISTORY OF THE

The history of the world is a vast and complex subject, encompassing the lives and actions of countless individuals and the events that have shaped our planet. From the dawn of time to the present day, the human story is one of constant change and evolution. The early civilizations of Mesopotamia, Egypt, and the Indus Valley laid the foundations of human society, while the rise of the Roman Empire and the spread of Christianity marked significant milestones in Western history. The Middle Ages saw the emergence of powerful monarchies and the growth of the European continent, while the Renaissance and the Age of Discovery opened up new horizons for exploration and trade. The modern era is characterized by the Industrial Revolution, the rise of nation-states, and the challenges of the 20th century, including two world wars and the Cold War. Today, we live in a globalized world where technology and communication have brought us closer together than ever before, but we also face new and complex challenges, such as climate change and global inequality. The history of the world is a testament to the resilience and ingenuity of the human spirit, and it is a story that continues to unfold before our eyes.

CHAPTER I

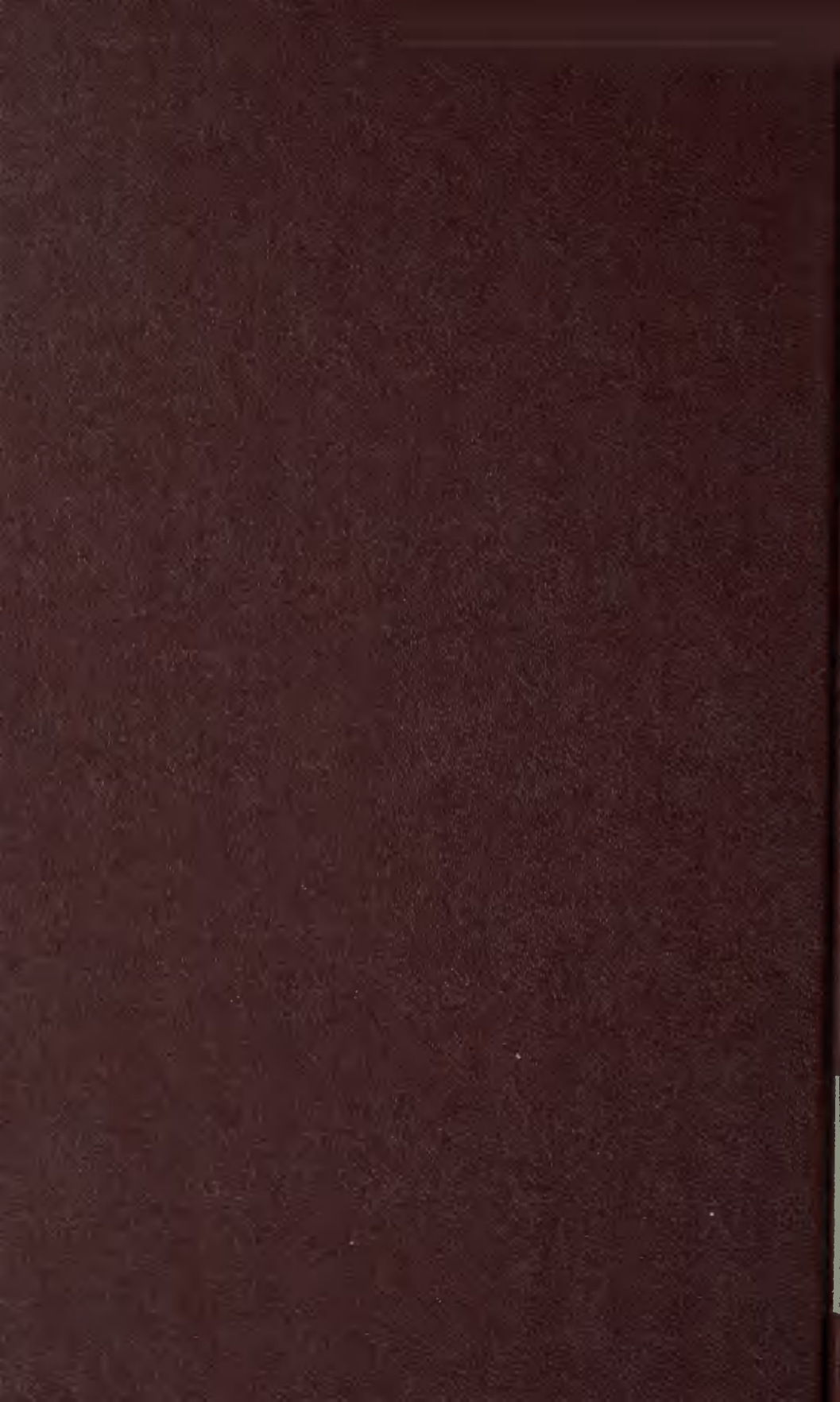
The first chapter of the history of the world is the story of the beginning of time. It is a story of the origins of life and the development of the universe. The Big Bang theory suggests that the universe began as a single point of infinite density and temperature, which then expanded and cooled, giving rise to the elements and the structures of the cosmos. The emergence of life on Earth is a mystery, but it is believed to have occurred through a series of chemical reactions and the evolution of simple organisms into more complex forms. The history of the world is a story of the human race, from the first hominids to the modern human. It is a story of the struggles and triumphs of our ancestors, and of the progress we have made as a species. The history of the world is a story of the human spirit, and of the power of our imagination and our ability to overcome adversity. It is a story that is as old as time, and that will continue to be told for as long as there are people on Earth.











**GretagMacbeth™ ColorChecker Color Rendition Chart**

